

John Harriott
aged 70, June 23th. 1815.
Projector, and Resident Magistrate.
of the Thames Police.

STRUGGLES

THROUGH

LIFE,

EXEMPLIFIED

In the

VARIOUS TRAVELS AND ADVENTURES

In Europe,

ASIA, AFRICA, AND AMERICA,

OF

JOHN HARRIOTT, ESQ.

RESIDENT MAGISTRATE OF THE

Thames-Police.

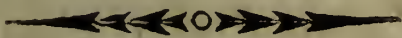
To which are added

*THOUGHTS on the SUBJECT of POLICE, SUGGESTIONS ARISING
From the ABUSE of PRIVATE MAD HOUSES, CONTEMPLA-
TIONS on DEATH, and the PHILOSOPHY of RELIGION.*

IN THREE VOLUMES.

Third Edition.

VOL. I.



LONDON:

PRINTED FOR THE AUTHOR,

And published by

LONGMAN, HURST, REES, ORME, AND BROWN,
PATERNOSTER-ROW.

1815.

ST. JOHN'S

WELL

WELL

WELL

WELL

WELL



*Maurice,
Fenchurch-street.*

*To my affectionate Children and Grand-
Children.*

DEDICATIONS, in general, are the vehicles of fulsome flattery: *this*, however, will I hope be acquitted of such an imputation, and have at least the recommendation of brevity. To you, my sincerely-beloved children and grand-children, I therefore dedicate these Memoirs, as to those whom I love and esteem more than I do any other on earth. This you well know; and all who are, or wish to be thought, affectionate parents, will readily give me credit for my sincerity,

One of my strongest inducements for

undertaking a work, to which I feel myself however but too incompetent, is to meet your wishes, by recording what would otherwise most probably be soon forgotten. I feel assured, likewise, that none will set a greater value upon it; and most devoutly do I pray, unto Almighty God, that the Memoirs of my Struggles through Life may prove instructive in guarding you against the errors and follies which they record, and teach you that you ought never to despair, but place a firm reliance on the Providence of God and his blessing on your own exertions.

From

Your truly affectionate father,

JOHN HARRIOTT.

PREFACE.

WHEN a man finds himself far advanced in years*, a review of his past conduct may be useful and instructive; though, by this, it is not meant that such a review ought not to have taken place at the earliest periods. The result of such investigation, fairly and candidly made, (and where is the use of a man's deceiving himself?) will necessarily tend to make the remainder of his days serene and comfortable, if, upon the whole, he is conscious

* Now threescore and ten.

of having spent his time to a good purpose, and lived a useful member of society. Should it prove otherwise, he ought to lose no time in reforming his principles and amending his manners; and certainly much may be accomplished by making all the reparation in his power for the injuries he has done, and much by sincere contrition, and a subsequent amendment of conduct.

Should the following sheets yield either instruction or amusement, the Author's trouble will be amply recompensed; but, should they sink into oblivion, his motives will afford him consolation. He has launched his bark into a sea to which he is a stranger, and without the requisite tackle for the voyage: he has directed his course by *plain sailing*, and has not attempted to work *traverse* by the *classics*, of which he is but a humble admirer: having had but little acquaintance with them when

young, he should expose himself by pretending to an intimacy now that he is old.

In the following pages, the Reader is not to expect romantic feats of gallantry. There is no dying from excess of love, though there is love in abundance for one man; if one favourite dies, in good time another succeeds, and another: the affections of the heart not being so rigidly confined, but that, with an open generous love for the whole sex, the Author, in spite of severe individual losses, was fortunate enough to find an ample sufficiency, among the amiable part of society, to rekindle his affections, and procure him the enjoyment of social and domestic comfort.

The Author professes himself to be a mere mortal, subject to the common passions of his kind: amidst the singular occurrences of an adventurous life, possibly he may be allowed to have possessed a

strong undaunted spirit when opposed to danger, and an alacrity to meet it half way, as the surest means of overcoming difficulties ; and he trusts that the tenor of his life will be found to evince, that his main pursuits have not been so selfish, but that, in endeavouring to benefit himself, the community, by his success, were also likely to be benefited.

Considered separately, the events of his life may not appear extraordinary ; but, from his various travels and adventures, fortunate and unfortunate, without the adventitious aid of family, friends, fortune, or classical education, this useful maxim may be deduced, that firm and steady perseverance, aided by resignation to the will of Providence, are the means best calculated for a safe voyage through the perilous ocean of life.

In writing these Memoirs, it was not the Author's original design to publish them

during his life; circumstances and arguments, however, having induced him to send them to the press, their speedy passage through two Editions, together with the liberal reports of the Work made by respectable Reviewers, have stamped a value exceeding the Author's expectation, and encouraged him not only to enter on a third Edition, with the liveliest sense of gratitude and satisfaction, but likewise to add another volume, which he hopes may meet with a like favourable reception.

the first of these is the fact that the
 present system of taxation is not
 only unfair in its operation but it is
 also unproductive. The present system
 of taxation is based on the principle
 of the "poll tax" which is a tax
 levied on every person regardless of
 his income or property. This system
 is not only unfair but it is also
 unproductive. It does not encourage
 industry or enterprise and it does
 not produce the revenue which is
 needed for the support of the
 government. The present system of
 taxation is based on the principle
 of the "poll tax" which is a tax
 levied on every person regardless of
 his income or property. This system
 is not only unfair but it is also
 unproductive. It does not encourage
 industry or enterprise and it does
 not produce the revenue which is
 needed for the support of the
 government.

INTRODUCTION.

STRUGGLES through Life! are they real or fictitious? Certainly the Author has it in his power to declare and must himself know whether they are true or fabulous; yet, should he daringly advance and avow the whole to be strictly true, would he not be liable to much unpleasant animadversion? He must therefore be content with observing, that, being so extensively known, it would be the most daring of all his adventures, to lay himself open to exposure, by fallacious representations without a prospect of the smallest benefit.

and while there are so many living, who are well acquainted with most of the principal transactions of his life.

Mankind believe or disbelieve according to their habits; that, which appears impossible to one, creates wonder that any doubt can be entertained of it by another. The most extravagant flights of imagination would find credit sooner than a very common operation of nature, when related to some millions of inhabitants of various parts of this globe; who, judging from their own habits and confined in their means of information and experience, conceive it to be utterly impossible; while as many, or more, are as much astonished at its being doubted. The circumstance alluded to is *frost*, which, to millions of inhabitants of the torrid zone, in Asia, Africa, and America, is so completely unknown, that it would require much ingenuity to invent a tale which they

would have more difficulty in believing, than that of water, or large rivers, becoming so solid as to admit of men and beasts to travel upon the surface without sinking or even wetting their feet. By way of illustrating this fact, permit me, courteous Reader, to tell you a sailor's story.

A sailor, who had been many years absent from his mother, who lived in an inland county, returned to his native village, after a variety of voyages to different parts of the globe, and was heartily welcomed home by the good old woman, who had long considered him as lost. Soon after his arrival, the old lady became inquisitive, and desirous to learn what *strange things* her son John had seen upon the mighty deep. Amongst a variety of things that Jack recollected, he mentioned his having frequently seen *flying fish*. "Stop, Johny," says his mo-

ther, “ don’t try to impose such monstrous impossibilities on me, child ; for, in good truth, I could as soon believe you had seen *flying cows* ; for cows, you know, John, can live out of water. Therefore, tell me honestly what you have seen in reality, but no more falsehoods, Johny.”

Jack felt himself affronted ; and, turning his quid about, when pressed for more curious information, he said, prefacing it with an oath, “ Mayhap, mother, you won’t believe me, when I tell you, that, casting our anchor once in the Red Sea, it was with difficulty we hove it up again ; which’ was occasioned, do you see, mother, by a large wheel hanging on one of the flukes of the anchor. It appeared a strange old Grecian to look at ; so we hoisted it in, and our captain, do ye mind me, being a scholar, overhauled him and discovered it was one of Pharoah’s chariot-wheels, when he was capsized in the

Red Sea." This suited the meridian of the old lady's understanding ; " Ay, ay, Johny," cried she, " I *can* believe this, for we read of it in the Bible ; but never talk to me of flying fish."

The truth is, that those who have seen much of the world are placed in rather an awkward situation. If, on being questioned, they relate all they have seen or known, though with the strictest attention to truth, they are almost certain of being reckoned *travellers*, a term pretty well understood as synonymous to *lying* : on the other hand, if, to avoid such odium, they decline giving an account of what they have seen, their good-natured neighbours set them down as *fools*, for not having noticed something abroad more wonderful than they have seen at home.

To steer clear, therefore, of such imputation as much as is in the Author's

power, he will neither assert nor deny the truth of what is herein related, but leave it to the free exercise of the Reader's credence. If, as an uninformed inhabitant of the torrid zone, he could believe the tale of water becoming a solid body, there will be nothing more difficult to believe in this history; but, should his faith, like the old lady's, be confined to his own Bible, he is welcome to believe or disbelieve as little or as much as he pleases.

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER I.

	Page
<i>The history commences with school-anecdotes</i>	1

CHAPTER II.

<i>Voyage to New-York, to Halifax, back to New-York; redeem a transport-girl</i>	15
--	----

CHAPTER III.

<i>Sail for Newfoundland, danger of shipwreck, arrival at St. John's, result of my Quixote-like purchase</i>	29
--	----

CHAPTER IV.

<i>Sail for Gibraltar, fall in with Admiral Boscawen, a smart engagement, capture of a French frigate, arrive at Gibraltar</i>	38
--	----

CHAPTER V.

<i>Cruising up the Mediterranean</i>	42
--	----

CHAPTER VI.

<i>In love, masquerades, the plague and consequences, dispute with the Turkish Bashaw at St. Jean d'Acre, and with the French ships there</i>	47
---	----

CHAPTER VII.

<i>Sail from St. Jean d'Acre, fall in with and capture one of the French ships</i>	63
--	----

CHAPTER VIII.

<i>Anecdotes of Captain Patrick</i>	64
---	----

CHAPTER IX.

<i>The island of Lampadocia</i>	76
---------------------------------------	----

CHAPTER X.

<i>Adventure in Corsica</i>	78
-----------------------------------	----

CHAPTER XI.

<i>Take a xebecque on our passage to Gibraltar</i>	88
--	----

CHAPTER XII.

<i>Earthquake off Lisbon</i>	89
------------------------------------	----

CHAPTER XIII.

<i>Shipwreck</i>	96
------------------------	----

CHAPTER XIV.

<i>Land at Plymouth, decline a promising good offer to live on shore, to sea again, at the attack of the Havannah and re-taking of Newfoundland</i>	117
---	-----

CHAPTER XV.

<i>Employed on a shipwreck</i>	120
--------------------------------------	-----

CHAPTER XVI.

*A trip up the Baltic; a present from Sir George Macartney to Lord Holland; a pleasant frolic at Holland-house*124

CHAPTER XVII.

*Voyages in the merchant-service. A duel. Former rigid observance of the Sabbath at Boston, in America. Bathing, and running the gauntlet through the town*135

CHAPTER XVIII.

*Meet with my old shipmate; carry a challenge from him to his former commander; obliged to fly; overtaken and cooped up in Dover Castle; Captain Hope and his flying serpents*155

CHAPTER XIX.

*A visit to the Savages in North America*162

CHAPTER XX.

*Peaceable times; disbanded sea-officers at a loss what to do; my relation volunteers with Count Orlow; accept a military appointment for India, commence soldier; the King of Denmark at the Tower; a crowded theatre*171

CHAPTER XXI.

*Embark for India; imaginary fears; my old ship-mate B— follows my relation Dugdale in the Russian service; passage to the Cape of Good Hope*184

CHAPTER XXII.

*At the Cape, unpleasant situation on the Table-Mount; comfortable and cheap living*192

CHAPTER XXIII.

Arrival at Madras ; with General Smith at the close of the war with Hyder Ally ; Colonel Campbell's gallant offer to attack Hyder at the Mount ; bashfulness of the governor, &c. ; satirical sketch of the same.....197

CHAPTER XXIV.

General Smith, his affability, &c. ; Major Fitzgerald, manual wit.....201

CHAPTER XXV.

The army new disciplined ; Major Fitzgerald's friendly present ; my Gentoo servant, his sufferings.....205

CHAPTER XXVI.

Arrival at Masulipatam ; Lieutenant Barnewall's liberal offer to a stranger ; observations on the superior liberality of the East, and consequent want of caution on returning to Europe. Mrs. W—— and her European servant209

CHAPTER XXVII.

Arrive at Ellore ; flattering reception ; again new disciplining the army216

CHAPTER XXVIII.

Appointed judge-advocate ; volunteer to officiate as chaplain, by marrying, christening, burying, &c.218

CHAPTER XXIX.

The East-India Company's military service preferable to others ; a concise account of the Sepoys, as officered by Europeans ; condition and advantages of such officers221

CHAPTER XXX.

Thoughts on the mode of settling the jemibunda which the rajahs pay to the Company, and consequences of mismanagement ; the death of a rajah, by his rebelling or refusing to pay ; severely wounded 225

CHAPTER XXXI.

Various anecdotes, viz. hunting a fox by crows : deer rescuing their fawn : fish falling in a shower of rain : deer bounding over soldiers heads in a line of march : a young woman carried off by a tiger in sight of the army 229

CHAPTER XXXII.

Anecdotes continued : effect of the burning heat in India : a commanding officer sent to Coventry : Captain Powel's recovery from a Gingeer fever by drinking of claret : our pay-master Daniel's recovery from a flux by drinking milk : observations thereon 235

CHAPTER XXXIII.

Death of an officer who was refused porter in a fever ; an agreement entered into, in consequence, by several officers, to administer relief to each other if demanded ; peacocks and tigers found in the same wild haunts ; Condepillee, or the Hills of Tigers, abounding with monkeys, green pigeons, and paroquets ; men's nests in trees, from which the natives shoot tigers 246

CHAPTER XXXIV.

Poisonous snakes difficult to distinguish from the branches they lie upon ; the large mountain-snake ; a narrow escape from a corra manill, whose bite is certain death ; experiment on a scorpion 250

CHAPTER XXXV.

Extraordinary view of a thunder-storm when sitting far above it, with a description of the fort where it happened; its effect on the Author, and his observations 256

CHAPTER XXXVI.

A royal tiger destroying a large buffalo; another royal tiger, his demeanour, with the effect on a horse and rider 260

CHAPTER XXXVII.

Alarms in travelling through a wood, in a stormy night 265

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

Hawking; tiger-shooting by Europeans; hunting the wild boar; a hot struggle between a hawk, a grey-hound, and a monkey; a hut carried away by a hawk; an Irish hoist 269

CHAPTER XXXIX.

Indian conjurors 275

CHAPTER XL.

Dutch hospitality; Free-Masonry 283

CHAPTER XLI.

A strange thief; method of shaming the most audacious 287

CHAPTER XLII.

Bramins. Perform a miracle 293

CHAPTER XLIII.

Decline settling at Madras as a lawyer; embark on board a country ship for the island of Sumatra; water-spouts 300

CHAPTER XLIV.

Arrive at Acheen; introduced to the sultan; large cannon half sunk in the earth, evidence of greater strength formerly; an enormous gun over the gate-way of the palace 305

CHAPTER XLV.

Malay punishments; precautions necessary to guard against surprise from Malay pirates; running a muck; jealousy and savage revenge; singular ordeal of Malays accused of adultery 310

CHAPTER XLVI.

Ayerbungy, Padang, Tappanooty: mountaineer-aborigines, their reputed cannibalism accounted for; decline their invitation to accompany them to their mountains; their report of an Englishman then residing with them 315

CHAPTER XLVII.

Moco-Moco; visit the old sultan; arrive at Bencoolen; hospitality of the settlement; scarcity of culinary vegetables where vegetation is so strong; fire produced by bamboo-friction; grass too strong for horses to penetrate, its fierce burning 321

CHAPTER XLVIII.

Earthquakes; violent illness and rash cure; habit of morning ablutions, and sitting al fresco in the hot land-winds; a new cure for the itch 325

CHAPTER XLIX.

Wild elephants and buffalos; an unexpected meeting; intelligence of Lieutenant Dugdale burning the Turkish fleet; a short account of my old shipmate's adventures 334

CHAPTER L.

Passage from Sumatra to the Cape of Good Hope; destructive effects of the sea-scurvy; a white squall off the Cape; sickly and weak state of our ship's crew; their rapid recovery by drinking new wine342

CHAPTER LI.

Invited to live at the Cape; observations and suggestions relative to its improvement as an English colony350

CHAPTER LII.

Arrive at St. Helena; singular courtship; Isle of Ascension; catching of turtle; short account of the interior, formed by a sub-marine volcano; the island inhabited by sea-fowl, wild goats, and rats; instinct of the young turtle, its many enemies; an opinion respecting their food362

CHAPTER LIII.

Land at Plymouth; my salutation; B—— continues with the ship; the smell of tallow candles very offensive after a long absence; intentions respecting my wounded leg; Surgeon Sharp's candid advice373

CHAPTER LIV.

Curious adventure of Byrn with the celebrated Miss Kennedy ..379

CHAPTER LV.

Reconcile my old ship-mate B—— to his family; my reception at the secretary-of-state's office395

CHAPTER LVI.

Happily married; irreparable loss of wife and child within a year400

CHAPTER LVII.

Unsettled ; commence underwriter at Lloyd's ; no losses, yet give it up ; marry again ; engage largely in farming, and in an extensive liquor-business ; misfortunes of my wife's father . . 401

CHAPTER LVIII.

Arrested for 1200l. by a man I never saw or heard of 406

CHAPTER LIX.

Threatened to be arrested for 4500l. my father-in-law's debts ; serious alternative of sacrificing a considerable property or hanging him 410

CHAPTER LX.

Quit mercantile concerns ; retire solely to farming ; difference of living in the country within the last fifty years 418

CHAPTER LXI.

Anecdotes of worthy clergymen ; poetical order for wine ; suitable answer 423

CHAPTER LXII.

Pleasant and useful public meetings promoted ; anecdotes of a rich man ; improvements easily made, if undertaken properly ; people in the country are as profligate in principle as they are in cities 431

STRUGGLES

THROUGH
LIFE, &c.

~~~~~

## **CHAPTER I.**

*The history commences with school-anecdotes.*

◆

**I** BELIEVE it is generally expected of the humblest historian to give some account of his origin. My parents I much revered and might truly be proud of, though without rank or riches to distinguish them. My father had served in the navy, and afterwards was master of a merchant-ship; my grand-father was the last of the family that was born at B——, in Northamptonshire, where the family had lived for several centuries; and the end of the



town, where they resided as tanners, went by their name. When the estate was sold to the Duke of M——, part of it being copy-hold, the title-deeds were traced back in the family as far as William Rufus.— This is all which I have to boast of concerning ancestry.

As nearly as I can recollect, I must have been between six or seven years of age, when the following little ludicrous circumstance occurred; which I relate to shew the strong early propensity I had to adventure.

My father lived a short mile distant from the town of Rochford, whither my younger brother and I went to a day-school, taking provisions in a little basket for our dinners. At the second cottage on entering the town, there lived a poor wretched old woman, who was reputed to be a witch: many were the stories told by servants and others, of her having been seen floating on the rough waves in stormy weather, by the seamen who sailed in the corn hoys, to and from London, along the coast of Essex.

Often as my brother and I passed the cottage, we grasped each other's hand pretty tight, looking very hard across the road to spy the old witch, (whose name I now forget), and see what she was about. She lived in one solitary room that had a front and back door opposite to each other, the latter opening into a piece of garden-ground, which she kept constantly cropping with the large white-headed poppy, the juice of which, it was said, she carefully preserved, to treat her imps with, every full moon.

This poor old creature frequently accosted us, accompanied with a good-natured smile, as we went to school in the morning, and returned in the evening: but it was a long time before we could persuade ourselves it was at all safe for us to stop and speak to her; by degrees, however, we became more familiar, and at length so sociable, as to offer her any of our provisions that were left, which she accepted most thankfully.

Thus far, all had been transacted on the outside of the threshold, over which, we



had been taught to believe, that all who ventured put themselves in her power. When our intimacy had subsisted some weeks, it became a frequent matter of debate between my brother and me, whether she really was a witch or not. I felt a strong desire to prove it by stepping over the threshold, but my brother George took on so piteously when I talked of doing this, that I gave up my very hazardous undertaking until we could satisfy ourselves, by some less dangerous proceeding, that she was no witch.

With our cold meat, we usually had a little vinegar in a phial, of which, it was seldom we had any to spare: when we had, the old girl, after putting the scraps of meat on a wooden trencher, would pour the vinegar from the bottle upon the meat, and most commonly dipped or wetted her finger with the vinegar, and, tasting it, smacked her gums together, exclaiming, "that was a choice relish." In noticing this, a thought struck me, I might put her witchcraft to the test. I knew that my brother was too timid to be trusted

with my secret, and therefore kept my own counsel. Having proposed to save a little vinegar one day, when we had some meat to spare for the old witch, I took an opportunity afterwards of emptying this out, and replaced it with a little fresh distilled of my own making. I was so full of the conceit, that, whether at play or learning my lesson, I was in a constant giggle, and got a rap or two of the schoolmaster's cane for laughing while standing before him, with others, to say our lessons.

The Witchy Dame, as we usually called her, was generally on the look out for us, after we became so gracious and friendly towards her. But when I saw her waiting at the door, I was no longer inclined to laugh, and doubts arose in my mind, whether she was not already acquainted with the trick I intended playing, and was waiting to punish me for it. As we drew nearer, my brother held the basket up, signifying there was something for her, which naturally enough caused a smiling welcome, with a " Bless you, my



dear young gentlemen, how good you are." This set me all to rights again, and the meat being placed on her old trencher, my brother very innocently gave her the phial, saying, "we have saved a little vinegar for you, dame."—"Aye, God bless you both," said the poor old creature as she poured the contents on the meat; then taking up a small scrap, dabbed it well into the sauce, and into her mouth went the choice relish. I waited no longer, but snatching up the basket, off I ran, calling to George, "She's no witch, she's no witch." My brother followed without knowing what was the matter, until, stopping at the stile leading into the fields from the road, but within sight of the cottage, I turned round and saw our dame on the outside of the threshold, shaking her shrivelled arm at us.

When my brother learnt the trick I had played, he was sadly fearful she would be revenged on us in some terrible manner: the following day, however, made us all good friends again; I told her the truth—she laughed, saying, indeed, she was no

witch, but that I was a sad rogue to play a poor old woman such a trick. I jumped over the dreaded threshold, and when my brother saw no ill consequence arise, he did the same.

In the course of a plain useful education, (the only fortune our father had to give his many children,) until just turned of thirteen, probably I witnessed and played as many school-pranks as others: yet I shall relate but two, and those merely to shew early propensities and the effect which they may produce, contrary to that which I believe is generally supposed.

The robbing of orchards and gardens by school-boys is not thought much of by those who do not suffer: an old gardener in our neighbourhood thought differently, as his livelihood depended on the produce. A party of six or seven of us, taking what we conceived to be a good opportunity, when we heard he was from home, broke into his orchard and climbed a tree of beautiful-looking apples. I was busy shaking them down, when the old



man put us all to flight by rising up, at a small distance, from some pease-haun, where he was hid behind a large mawkin, or scare-crow : I was down in an instant, and too nimble to be caught.

We thought ourselves safe ; but the old man had marked two of us, and heard the names of one or two more when calling to each other. In the evening, he came and made his complaint. Domine ordered us all into close confinement, with nothing but bread and water, from Saturday night until Monday morning, when we had our usual breakfast, out of mere pity, as he said, for the fate that awaited us, and which he had endeavoured to save us from, but in vain ; for the old gardener had made his complaint to a magistrate, before whom we were then to be taken, tied together like felons. A constable attended, and we were marched along the turnpike-road, for a mile and a half, to his worship's house : he was a clergyman, and reckoned very severe. The charge being made, we were asked what we had to say before we were committed to pri-

son : the ignominy of the trial, the consequent punishment, the distress of our parents, &c. were forcibly laid down. I had been stubborn; or, as I reckoned it, firm, through the whole, until my parents, &c, were mentioned ; I then cried like a child, and in most piteous terms prayed to be forgiven : his reverence got up and hurried out of the room, taking Domine with him. Never, surely, was a plan of the kind better contrived and carried on to produce a proper effect : it made a wholesome impression on my mind, never to be effaced. The gardener was sent for, and, soon after, they all returned ; when the justice informed us, that our master had, with some difficulty, prevailed on the gardener to forgive us, on account of our parents, on our promising, before the magistrate, not to offend again. This we very earnestly did : and most truly did I keep my promise, al' though it was not many days before we learned that the whole was a contrivance between his Worship and Domine.

The other circumstance was not a prank,



but a trick, or rather a lying piece of thievery, that I would rather conceal than expose, if it were not for the good effect I am confident it produced on me the whole of my life.

Several of us were playing together, when one of the boys tossed up a shilling: it was caught by another, chucked by him to a third, and bandied about a good deal, until it dropped between me and another boy, and could not be found again after the strictest search we could make: nor did I know more of it than any other, at that time; but, an hour or two after, as I was swinging on the bough of an oak-tree, I saw something glitter as it fell from the cuff of my coat-sleeve; picking it up, I found it was a shilling, and I confess I had no doubt of its being the same shilling that had been so strangely lost. I soon felt strongly tempted to keep it, nor was I deficient in argument, to persuade myself I had a kind of right, by so finding the shilling at a considerable distance from the place where one had been lost. Honesty and roguery battled it for

some time, until the latter got the mastery, by leading me to the chandler's shop, where I changed it, to purchase something for the tooth. It was soon known that I had money to spend, and I was challenged about the shilling. I could truly say I knew nothing about the shilling when lost, acknowledged I had found one under the oak, but concealed the circumstance of seeing it fall from my cuff. I obtained no credit for any thing which I said concerning the oak, and those, who were not afraid of being thrashed, charged me with stealing it while at play together.

God knows whether I had a stronger propensity to pilfering than others, I never discovered it before; and I felt so punished, whenever it occurred to my memory, that I would have given worlds to have had it undone. This I knew was impossible: dishonesty and lying I found were inseparable; and, personifying them in idea, they appeared as hideous and terrifying as the head of Medusa. I was equally sensible of the loss which I had sustained in my own feelings: I felt



abashed, ashamed, and afraid that honesty and truth had left me and were irrecoverable. I never had set half the value upon them before : I figured them as beautiful virgins, whom I loved and coveted to recover for the peace and happiness I possessed before I parted from them ; and, comparing it with the misery I had suffered since, I vowed, as religiously and solemnly as was in my power, never again to allow a moment's hesitation in cleaving to truth and honesty ; and I can truly say I have loved them since for their own sakes.

Let others, at my age or any age, confess their errors as freely, with the operation it has had on their minds when young, that they may serve as beacons to save youth from being lost on such quicksands ; or, if just touching, to warn them of their danger, if not resolutely attended to by heaving their little vessel into clear water with all possible dispatch, and keeping a better watch in future. It is the remaining indolent and indifferent about it, until settled ever so little in the quicksand, that increases the difficulties a hundred



fold, and soon renders it nearly impossible to save the vessel, much less any of the cargo. On the other hand, if speedily recovered, the remembrance of such danger may be highly beneficial through the whole of their voyage.

I declare, openly and candidly, that, in various trying and critical situations of my life, a momentary recollection of this before-mentioned baseness while a school-boy, with the self-convicted punishment that followed, proved of infinite service in guarding and checking me against temptation to do wrong. A consciousness of acting uprightly has enabled me to face and overcome dangers and difficulties, which otherwise I must have sunk under. A cheerful, open, countenance, a natural flow of spirits, and a never-hesitating firm step, accompany such internal sense of doing right, which a contrary conduct never can acquire, although aided by the greatest arts of hypocrisy and dissimulation.

On this topic, I speak feelingly and most seriously, as a father and grand-father to


many children, who have long been pressing me, together with other friends, to give them a written account of my life.

I aim not at dull preaching: gaiety of heart and cheerful social pleasures have ever been my favourites, and I mean to encourage them to the latest period of my life. I do not like those gloomy-hearted and cloudy-headed mortals, who conceive, that, to be religious and good, they must appear with sour, crabbed, countenances; relinquishing the many innocent pleasures of society, as inimical to religion and repugnant to the will of the Deity. Nor do I admire those, who, having spent their own hey-day of youth, look with envy on those who succeed them; morosely exclaiming against their enjoyment of recreations and pastimes which they no longer are capable of themselves. To me, it appears more consistent and grateful to enjoy, with cheerfulness, all that it has pleased the Divine Providence to bless us with: what I cannot enjoy myself, I rejoice to hear others capable of, and can laugh heartily to see and hear them laugh.



## CHAPTER II.

*Voyage to New-York, to Halifax, back to New-York ;  
redeem a transport-girl.*



I TOOK my first bias for travelling, or going to sea, from reading Robinson Crusoe ; and, when I was little more than thirteen, sailed as a midshipman on-board a ship of war, bound with a convoy of merchant-vessels for New-York, in company with another frigate, bound to the West Indies, with a similar convoy ; having orders to keep together until we arrived at a certain latitude.

The first night, after sailing from Spit-head, and before one half of the merchant-ships were prepared, by stowing away the lumber they had on deck, securely lashing their boats and spars, &c. a violent gale of wind, or rather a hurricane, came on so suddenly as to put the best ships in the fleet in danger. Dismal, indeed, was



this early introduction to a seafaring life. Having laid some months at Portsmouth, and from activity formed an intimacy with every mast head and yard-arm in the ship, I conceited myself half a sailor; but, obliged as I was to mount aloft in a dark stormy night, to assist in taking in the sails, my conceit vanished.

Our main and fore top-sails, being close reefed, were, with the mizen, all the sails we left set; the rest were furled with such dispatch as none but British seamen, well commanded, could have used. The danger from the storm alone, terrific as that appeared to so young a sailor, was comparatively small, to the greater danger of the ships running foul of each other. The continual firing of signal guns of distress, from many of the merchant-ships in various parts of the fleet, without a possibility of our rendering them any assistance before day-light, added much to the horrors of the night. The ship which I was in received no material damage, but day-light discovered the fleet scattered in all directions : five completely dismasted ; se-

veral with the loss of top-masts; many that had run foul of each other, much damaged and very leaky; and two, still more unfortunate, that were run foul of, had foundered, with the loss of several lives. Affording all the aid in our power to those that needed it, and seeing the crippled vessels well into a port in the Channel, we proceeded with the rest on our voyage.

I have since often wondered at my having no sickness during this short, but heavy, gale; yet, in less than a fortnight after, meeting with another gale, nothing like so severe, I suffered all that well can be suffered from sea-sickness, for the time it lasted.

Some of my brother-midshipmen, who were already seasoned, played their tricks with me and another youth, as raw as myself at sea, or rather worse, although some years older. This early suffering together drew us closely into the bonds of a long and firm friendship, that may have been equalled, but in some respects not easily exceeded. I recovered much sooner



than he did, and then administered to him: which of the two was more gratified, I know not; myself in giving or he in receiving such aid as was in my power to bestow, for three or four days that he continued ill after I had worked round again; and this amidst the jokes and jeers of our messmates, which only served to make our regard for each other so much the stronger.

As I shall have occasion, in the course of these Memoirs, to speak again of this youth, I will attempt an outline of his character, as an eccentric one. — His education was far beyond that which I had received, of which I was very sensible. He was volatile and impetuous, strong in his affections, severe and relentless in his animosities, and eager and resolute, beyond the bounds of prudent bravery, in new undertakings; but he did not always possess that firmness and perseverance to encounter continued difficulties, so essentially necessary for ultimately succeeding in great enterprizes. Liberal to profusion at times, yet subject to some unaccountable



littlenesses : a scrupulous regard to truth on points of honour, in all military concerns ; but rather careless in relating matters for amusement : proud and haughty to those whom he did not well accord with, yet affable and complying, almost to submissiveness, with those whom he esteemed ; but they were not many. The dislike he had taken to all our messmates, for their bantering during his long sea-sickness, he never attempted to conquer ; and, conscious of his future independance, he thought himself slighted by the captain and officers, from their little attention to him during his illness. He was certainly a strange compound of strong natural parts, poisoned by early indulgences and bad habits as he grew up.

Our friendship was formed as I have mentioned, and grew with our growth. Notwithstanding he had such advantage of years, education, and command of property, as might in some degree have accounted for, if not warranted, his assuming a little, yet any stranger, to have judged of us by our conduct to each

other, might have concluded that I rather assumed the superiority. In fact, he almost courted me so to do, and never seemed better pleased than when he could get me to shine, as he used to term it; treating me, in all respects, as a favourite younger brother.

I had been recommended to Captain R—— by a relation, who had formerly been his shipmate: the captain put me under the care of Lieutenant L——y, to make a seaman of me, and he soon taught me how to take care of myself. On the captain or any of the superior officers shewing me any kindness, instead of my friend being any way jealous, as some of my brother-midshipmen were, he would express himself highly pleased; observing, that he could half forgive their slights to him for the notice they took of me.

It is not my intention to relate the common occurrences on-board a ship, although many of them might be entertaining to people on-shore: they would appear very flat from my pen, after reading Smollett, and will, therefore, form no part of my



plan, unless I am particularly interested in any of them, or the singularity of the circumstance seems to warrant it.

Nothing material happened during our passage to New-York, except a smart brush with two stout French privateers, who kept hovering round our convoy a few days after we parted company with the West-India convoy. Our ship was French-built; and, as sailors say, sailed like the wind. Our captain, finding no other means of clearing the convoy from them, gave necessary instructions, to the captain of a well-armed and fast-sailing light ship in the fleet, to keep the convoy together: and the following morning, by break of day, having previously dropped astern and to leeward of our convoy, gave chase to the privateers. They bore away, keeping together for support: we did not fire a gun until nearly alongside the sternmost of the two, when we gave him a broadside from our starboard guns, in exchange for his, without shortening sail, and of course shot a-head of him. They had both been firing at us with their stern chasers for a long time, without any in-



jury but to our sails: after our broadside, the sternmost vessel did not fire another gun. The stoutest ship was a-head, and shifted her course: a short time brought us upon her quarter, when she yawed to give us her broadside, which did mischief enough to our sails and rigging, so as to give her hopes of escape, which she tried by hawling her wind to the westward, while the other hawled hers to the eastward. In about twenty minutes, however, we were along side: she had the temerity to try another broadside, in the hope of carrying away a mast or yard, and then struck, but not without paying dearly for such temerity. She was crowded with men, and our fire did severe execution among them: the captain of the privateer lost an arm. Had it not been for our convoy, we should certainly have taken the other also; but, being nearly out of sight of our own fleet, we dared not to chase her. We had five men and a boy wounded, one of whom died.

In the afternoon we joined our fleet with the prize; she mounted four and twenty guns and had one hundred and forty men

on board, eighteen of whom were killed or wounded. Having been out a long time, their water ran very short: our passage was likewise very tedious, which, together with so many prisoners, brought us to a short allowance of water; and, for three days before we got in, having a foul wind, each man was reduced to one pint a day, which, in the month of August, on the American coast, gave me a true knowledge, not easily forgotten, of the value of fresh water.

We arrived at Sandy-Hook, with our fleet all safe, landed the prisoners, and took in water and fresh stock; on which duty being constantly employed, I had a larger share of refreshment and recreation on shore than any on board, excepting the captain and purser.

From New-York, we sailed for Halifax, in Nova Scotia. The French privateers, from the Gulph of St. Lawrence, had been so very busy and successful in taking vessels bound with provisions for Newfoundland, as to create an alarm for the island being distressed in the ensuing win-



ter, if not provided for in time. We were ordered back, therefore, to New-York, to procure vessels, load them with provisions, and convoy them to Newfoundland.

On our return to New-York, and while lying there for these vessels, I was again fortunate, in being much on shore to attend the captain, as well as make short excursions to Long-Island, which, abounding in fruit, together with the pressing hospitality of the people, appeared a paradise.

At this time, a brig arrived from Ireland, full of passengers, most of whom were to be sold as servants for a number of years, to pay for their passage. A market for selling men, women, and children, appeared so strange a thing as to induce my friend B—— and myself to go on board and view the scene. From breakfast, or eight o'clock, until noon, on each side of the vessel, there was a row of these self-transported people, made as clean and tidy as circumstances permitted, with their faces towards those who came on board in want of servants. The price was



fixed by the captain, the servants bargaining as well as they could, for less than seven years, with their intended master or mistress : and those, who were not thought worth the price demanded for seven years, the captain was ultimately obliged to sell for the highest sum any person would give for that time. The greatest fear entertained by the purchasers (many of whom had emigrated in the same way) was of these servants running away from them when they became a little acquainted with the country. It sometimes happened that an old settler, in search of a servant, and enquiring of the party what part of Ireland they came from, would meet with a relation ; when, if females, they would set up such a lamentable howl, with others that were in no way interested joining them, that the market was disturbed and seldom any business done until these dear relatives had agreed on terms ; yet both parties strove to make as good a bargain as they could, and the old settler commonly had the advantage.

Having repeated our visits until we be-

came known as officers of such a ship, we were rather startled one day at a nice black-eyed girl, whom we had joked with the day before, dropping on her knees when we came to her, and taking hold of both our coats. With tears in her eyes, she implored us, for the love of God, to release her from the situation she was in and take her to her mother. I believe we both looked very foolish, and concluded she was crazy. However, she soon unriddled it, by saying her mother kept a large tavern at St. John's, in Newfoundland, whither she had learnt that our ship was bound; assuring us, that, if we would pay the captain his demand for her passage from Ireland and take her home, her mother would gladly repay the whole thrice over, if required. I was a good deal affected, and felt unusual sensations; my friend nearly the same. We were relieved by the master of the brig coming up and inviting us into his cabin, where he told us all he knew of her, that she came to him at Belfast in great distress, though decently dressed, praying him to take her



to any port in America, to save her from destruction. She told him the same story about her mother, and that, though she had been very wicked to run away from her, she well knew, as soon as she could inform her where she was, her mother would gladly re-purchase her only child of him. We promised to see her within a day or two.

I felt a very Don Quixote in the business of relieving the distressed damsel, and B—— inclined the same way, but remarked the difficulty of obtaining our captain's permission, of whom he was determined not to ask the smallest favour. At last, we agreed to undertake her release as co-partners, provided the captain, whose permission I was to solicit, consented to her being taken on board.

On applying to Captain R——, he laughed pretty heartily at my credulity, well satisfied the girl was a jilt; and added, that, as to allowing her passage in the ship, he neither could nor would. Our shipmates, likewise, getting hold of the tale, roasted us both without mercy.



Notwithstanding all this, I was determined to accomplish her relief and convey her to her mother, if possible. Making inquiry among the vessels then taking in provisions for St. John's, I found a master of one of the schooners, that knew her mother to be, as she had described her, a tavern-keeper. I took him with me on board the brig, and, from farther conversation with the girl, was more satisfied and more determined.

The master of the schooner agreed to take her for a few dollars, and I acquainted my friend B—— how far I had succeeded ; but, whether it was the bantering of our ship-mates, or some other cause, (for I was too much vexed to require a particular explanation,) he declined having any thing farther to do in the business. I told him it was very well, I would take the risk myself, but, as I had not the necessary cash, he must advance, as a loan, what I wanted. This he did, and I released my damsel ; and never, surely, did a poor creature shew more grateful and more rejoiced. The master of the schoo-

ner was with me, and we took her immediately on board his vessel, lying in one of the slips near the Fly-Market, and nearly loaded.

I believe B—— was angry with himself, that he had retracted; for, as often as our mess-mates began to jeer me, he fought my battles, declaring that I had more gallantry and generosity than himself and all the rest of them put together. They, however, still maintained that I should be duped.

### CHAPTER III.

*Sail for Newfoundland, danger of shipwreck, arrival at St. John's, result of my Quixote-like purchase.*



I HAD very little time to spare, after this, before we sailed with our little fleet; nor was I quite certain of my lass being on board the schooner, until the fourth or fifth day after sailing, when, being becalm-



ed and on the Banks, in a thick fog, two of our boats were ordered out, in different directions, to look after our little convoy and give fresh instructions. I went with Lieutenant Lindsay in one, and had the satisfaction to find my lass safe on board her vessel. My friend Lindsay, having thus seen and conversed with her, became a convert himself, and, on our return to the ship, converted others.

For several days we were thus becalmed, in a thick fog, and without an observation of the sun: our decks, however, were covered with cod-fish every day. The calm was succeeded by a hard gale, which sprung up right in our teeth, and continued, together with the fog, several days; the sun seldom making its appearance, and never sufficiently for us to take an observation to be depended on.

We had lost sight of every vessel in the convoy, when a change of wind came in our favour and blew fresh: with this we expected, by our dead-reckoning, to arrive at St. John's in three days, and made sail accordingly.



We had been running all the following night under whole top-sails, with the wind upon our quarter, when, just at the peep of day, the quarter-master at the cund sang out, "Breakers right a-head, by God!" The lieutenant of the watch, instantly convinced of the lamentable truth, ordered the top-sail halyards to be let run and the helm put down to bring her head to wind as quick as possible, though at considerable risk of carrying away our masts. We were running so fast through the water, that, in a few minutes more, the ship must have been dashed to atoms on a hard iron-bound shore of perpendicular rocks.

It was my watch below at the time; but, so loud and quick was the alarm, that we were all upon deck in an instant, and I believe not one on board appeared in a single garment more than he laid down in. I had drawers on, which was more than many had; and in this condition we mounted aloft to close reef the top-sails, our courses set and close hawled, though doubtful whether any of our masts had

received injury by throwing her in the wind so suddenly. Fortunately, they had not; so that we were able to carry a press of sail, with a view to weather a point of land which we discovered at day-break, as the only probable means of escaping shipwreck. We did weather it, but so very nicely that we almost gasped for breath as we passed it, expecting every moment the ship to strike and her whole company to perish with her.

We soon found that we were completely land-locked, unable to clear the land on either tack, whilst the wind increased to a strong gale, so as to render it dangerous, under other circumstances, to have carried top-sails. We continued still on the same tack, every eye in the ship on the stretch to decry any nook or opening for the chance of shelter, or at least some kind of beach, where, in case of unavoidable shipwreck, there might be some chance, though ever so small, of saving our lives.

For more than three hours we were thus looking in vain, and nearly hopeless. Du-



ring this interval, the boatswain and part of the crew were employed in bending all the cables in readiness, when, on our lee-beam, we discovered an inlet, which, as we opened, appeared to run far in. Though still uncertain of our fate, we hailed it with joyful acclamations.

After a short consultation with his officers, our captain determined to enter, as the only probable chance of finding anchorage. With our courses clewed up, we bore away and entered what proved to be a deep bay : we again hawled our wind, trading to and from, across the bay, under our topsails, and sounding all the way as we thus drifted up. Finding a clean bottom and strong anchoring-ground, Captain R—— thought it more prudent to trust to our anchors and cables, though very much exposed to the wind that blew, than run the risk of going higher up in the bay in search of better shelter. The gale increased to a perfect storm and continued for three days ; with difficulty we rode it out, with three anchors and cables-a-head and our masts and yards struck.



On the return of moderate weather, we were favoured with a good observation of the sun, by which we pretty clearly made out our situation to be that of Shoulder-of-Mutton Bay, in Newfoundland; and could only account for the great mistake in the ship's reckoning, by an uncommon strength and set of the Gulph-stream during the calm and subsequent gale while on the Banks, together with our being so long without an observation.

On the wind moderating and shifting a little, we worked out; and, clearing the land, bore away for St. John's, where we anchored in safety on the evening of the following day. Most of our convoy were in before us; two had put into the Bay of Bulls, and one sloop, we learned soon after, was wrecked very near to the place where we had almost met a similar fate.

Before the ship was fairly moored and the decks cleared, &c. a boat came along side, inquiring for me. A large basket was handed in, containing vegetables, milk, and cranberry-pies, accompanied by a note from my black-eyed lass, express-

ing her own and her mother's grateful acknowledgements for what I had done, and a hope of soon welcoming me on shore. Captain R—— was gone on shore to wait on the governor, or I should have rejoiced to pay him a side-wind compliment, by an offer of part of the first fruits of my adventure. Lieutenant Lindsay pleasantly accepted a part, and the rest I ordered down to our mess-room.

The tables were now turned ; the laugh began to be on my side, and I was by no means sparing. B—— joined me, bantering himself and the rest ; observing how queerly they should all look, if introduced by me to the mother and daughter as particularly good friends, who had so well encouraged my undertaking. Then, acknowledging himself a repentant sinner, thought he was entitled to partake of the fatted calf, which he meant to do freely, but doubted whether *they* could relish any of it. Sailors, however, are not over scrupulous on such occasions, nor easily bantered from enjoying good things when set before them.



After the recent rough buffetings, every article was doubly welcome : we laughed, joked, and enjoyed ourselves ; and the health of my black-eyed Susan, as they called her, was drunk in a bumper.

On going a-shore the following day, I took the first opportunity of calling : it was the only tolerable tavern in the place. My damsel flew to embrace me, and the old woman, without waiting for any introduction, clasping her hands about my neck, almost smothered me. She sang out a kind of Irish *pillalilleloo* ; then clapping her hands and applying them directly to my cheeks, held me as it were at arms length ; and, looking stedfastly in my face, called out, “ Och ! to be sure I shan’t love the dear crature as long as I live.”

She repaid the money which I had advanced for her daughter, and wished to pay more ; but at no rate whatever would she permit me to pay for any thing I had at her house during the time we remained at St. John’s ; and at our departure sent a quantity of good things on board for the




mess, which at such a place we should have been at a loss to obtain by any other means.

It may be necessary to explain here the cause of this young lady's absence from her mother and being found in so disagreeable a plight. She had been tempted, by an officer, to leave her home and accompany him to England, where he forsook her. Friendless and unknown, prostitution seemed her only resource; until, recollecting to have heard her mother talk of relations at Belfast, in Ireland, she determined to seek them; and, in the hope of assistance from them, to get back to her. She took her passage for that place in one of the London traders; but her inquiries were ineffectual, she could find neither relations nor friends. In this distress, hearing of a vessel taking passengers for New York, she concerted the plan which I have described.

## CHAPTER IV.

*Sail for Gibraltar, fall in with Admiral Boscawen, a smart engagement, capture of a French frigate, arrive at Gibraltar.*



ALL on board were much pleased to learn that our captain had received instructions to sail, with all possible dispatch, for Gibraltar. It was late in the year, and the place was getting extremely uncomfortable from the intense coldness of the weather, although the wind was from the south-east, which detained us so long that we became apprehensive, lest, when the wind shifted to the northward, we should be frozen in for the winter before we could clear the harbour.

During this delay, we were busily employed in cutting and fetching spruce-fir on board, and in brewing as much spruce-beer as possible, for the use of the whole



ship's company; the captain, officers, and all, drinking it in common.

The Newfoundland harvest, or fishery, being over, we shipped a number of Irishmen; they stiled themselves Holy Ghosters, and terribly wicked mutinous dogs they were; nothing short of extreme severity in discipline, and unremitted vigilance, could keep them in any kind of subordination.

On the wind chopping suddenly round, we sailed, getting out of the harbour just at dusk in the evening; by the morning, in all probability, we should have been frozen in, as the wind, settling at north-west, blew a complete freezer, and brought us next day to the goose-wings of our fore-sail, and at night to our bare poles. For several days we continued thus, depending much on the man at the helm to guard against the ship's broaching-to.

This was the quickest passage I ever made. On the thirteenth day after leaving the harbour of St. John, we were off Cape St. Vincent; the next day we fell in with Admiral Boscawen, who had engag-



ed and beat the French fleet, and was then pursuing the flying enemy, who were running for Cadiz.

Joining the chase, our superior sailing enabled us to run considerably a-head, and overhaul the three sternmost ships of the enemy; one a large two-decker, seemingly much crippled, with two frigates to attend her. The frigates dropped a-stern to engage us, seeing the distance we were from the other chacing ships. We ran close along side the leewardmost ship, and gave her an English salute; then, throwing the ship athwart her weather-bow, completely stayed her proceeding, as it was evidently intended by both to continue a running fight, two to one, while at such a distance from other support, or compel us to drop the chase. But Monsieur was mistaken, our captain was determined to fight them both if he could not make sure of one.

For a short time, we sustained both their fires; but, as the antagonist we had grappled with and our ship had lost their way through the water, his companion una-

voidably shot a-head ; and, before he could regain a situation to annoy us, our chasing ships were approaching too fast for his venturing to aid his partner any longer ; he, therefore, boldly ran away and left him in the lurch. The Frenchmen attempted to board us and cut away, by which they lost several men : it is due to them, to say they fought most gallantly. Finding, at length, they could not disengage their ship, and that one of our seventy-fours was drawing near, the enemy struck his white flag and surrendered.

Old Boscawen complimented our captain for his conduct. R—— answered by observing, that, having formerly sailed under his command as a midshipman, he had profited by his constant practice and orders, never to waste or burn powder until near enough to singe the enemy's whiskers with the priming of his guns. Rough as the old admiral was, this was a compliment that could not be otherwise than flattering.

We were now so near to Cadiz, that all farther pursuit was useless : gathering



the ships together, we made for Gibraltar.

In this engagement we had six men killed and several wounded: myself, among the latter, by splinters that tore the outside of my left leg so unmercifully, as to make the surgeons doubtful of effecting a cure without amputation; but, a good constitution and good spirits aiding their operations, (which, in extracting some of the splinters, were frequently very severe,) I recovered sooner than was expected.

---

## CHAPTER V.

### *Cruising up the Mediterranean.*

—

AFTER lying at Gibraltar a short time to refit and refresh, and exchange spruce-beer for wine, we had the admiral's orders to proceed up the Mediterranean, as several French privateers, from their fast sail-



ing, escaped our cruisers and greatly annoyed the Leghorn and Smyrna trade. This was exactly to all our wishes.

We sailed with a roving commission, but met with nothing in our passage to Leghorn, where we put in for intelligence: we made a short stay, procured better wines, with abundance of fresh stores, and then proceeded to sea, eager to fall in with some of the rich French Levanters.

It would be tiresome and useless to give a regular detail of the ship's various courses and the ports which we visited for a few hours or days, as it happened, in the course of three separate long cruises which we fitted out for. Sicily, Smyrna, Zant, Cyprus, Alexandria, and St. Jean d'Acre, we repeatedly visited; the little island of Lampadocia, likewise, served extremely well to lie by in.

Upon the whole, we were fortunate enough to pick up several French polacres; some valuable, others only worth ransoming for what little sum the captains or super-cargoes of them would agree to.

Such circumstances as appear worth relating during more than sixteen months cruising in almost every part of the Mediterranean, I insert here, though not at all connected in point of time.

We had but one smart skirmish in all the three cruises ; this was with a privateer, off Cape Bona. She sailed incomparably well, beat us in light airs, and rather out-rowed us with her sweeps in a calm ; our boats were therefore all manned to board her, and we must have had a tight contest, had it not been for a breeze springing up when we were nearly within hail, while she was firing from her stern chasers, swivels, and small arms. Finding that she drew from us, and our ship catching the breeze, we returned on board ; and, the wind freshening, at last began to overhaul her, and, after several hours chase, from day-light until evening, captured her just before she could reach Malta, whither she was flying for refuge.

At another time, we had a narrow escape. Having laid the ship to, most of the night, at break of day three vessels



were discovered about a league to leeward, but at some distance apart from each other. We bore down on the largest, in the centre, who, edging away considerably from the course she was first steering, and the other two ships continuing under the same easy sail, we concluded her to be a Frenchman, and a prize of course: but, day-light opening fast, we discovered she had a double row of teeth; and, the headmost ship then tacking, we deemed it prudent to haul our wind and make out what they were, before we proceeded to farther intimacy.

We were not long in suspense: having fired a gun to leeward, and hoisted our English colours, our salute was returned, and all three displayed the white flag. Signals, also, passed between them, which showed they were in company. Putting the best face upon things, we fired a shot in defiance; and, making all possible speed, they immediately crowded sail after us. They consisted of two frigates and a fifty-gun ship: one of the frigates kept our way, and we doubted whether



she could not have come up with us ; but, as her companions dropped fast a-stern, she seemed a little bashful.

Having increased our distance sufficiently from the others, we bantered our neighbour by firing a gun and hoisting a coil of rope at our mizen peak, signifying we would give him a tow, and soon after shortened sail, to let him run up along side if he chose it ; when, finding we were so very civil, he hove to, as if to wait for farther instructions from his commodore, and we proceeded on our cruise.

We were also hummed out of a small prize, by the master of a polacre, who declared he had the plague on board and earnestly requested us to take him and the Frenchmen out of his vessel, and give her up to several Turks he had on board, passengers from Alexandria to Constantinople. An officer, however, was sent on board to examine cautiously. I suppose he was over cautious : his report confirmed the Frenchman's assertion, and we declined farther intercourse with him.


He was met with by the *Fame*, priva-

teer, a few days after, who, not being so credulous, captured and brought him into Zante while we were lying there.

---

## CHAPTER VI.

*In love, masquerades, the plague and consequences, dispute with the Turkish Bashaw at St. Jean d'Acre, and with the French ships there.*



AT Leghorn, during the Carnival season, I became intimate with a youth about my own age, whose father and mother were French, but settled long enough at Leghorn to make my friend and his sister Italians. He was very desirous of making a short trip to sea, and I obtained permission of Captain R—— to indulge him with a cruise; but a master of one of our prizes, proving to be a relation of his father's, dissuaded him from his project.

On our return to Leghorn, in the richest prize we had taken, under Lieutenant



Lindsay, as prize master, I was continually solicited by his family to be there as often as I could obtain permission to go on shore ; nor did I require much pressing, for his sister was more beautiful than language can express. She was constantly challenging me to dance or teach her English ; I was soon over head and ears in love, and Signora did not appear much behind hand.

What the old people could contemplate by encouraging our being so much together, I never could discover, unless their object was to make me a convert to the Roman Catholic religion. I honestly confess, had they not taken the measures they did, my passion then was so strong for the beautiful object, that they, or rather *ma belle Signora*, might have moulded me into any form.

We were both very young and very foolish ; but, as we grew older, our wisdom increased. She possessed a noble, bold, commanding, countenance, with a carriage and manner suited to an imperial diadem.



On my return from our third and last cruise, I was received by the whole family with increased partiality. In the course of the first evening, she took the earliest opportunity that offered, to converse apart, by inviting me to a walk in the garden, where, without the smallest circumlocution, she said she had to ask me a question or two, to which she depended on my honour, as an English Cavalier, for direct and distinct answers.—“ I do not ask if you love me,” said she, “ I know you do; but, tell me candidly and truly, does your sense of honour to your country and religion permit you to relinquish both, and, by marrying me, to accept of mine?” The suddenness and surprise of this double question petrified me, and for the moment drove away all considerations but those of my country, friends, and connexions. I soon recovered, and was beginning to pour out the ardent honest affection of my heart, when she stopped me, saying, “ We have no time to spare: I understand your emotion as well as if you had been hours in ex-

plaining. Strong as I acknowledge my passion for you, Cavalier, I could not have made such a sacrifice myself, and therefore have no right to exact or expect it from you. I do not love the less, though I lament the cause ; but the past must be forgotten. You must, however, continue the same attentions to me, or I cannot answer for the consequences to yourself. I am older than you," she continued, "and know the danger of awakening any jealousy among my relations here better than you do. It may be difficult to both to maintain the appearance, yet refrain from the smallest excess, of love ; but it must be done. Be easy on my account : if we do not betray ourselves, there will be no danger to either. We will now go in, hand in hand, and tell them we are going to favour them with a minuet: I will then challenge you to sing an Italian song, after my attempting one in English ; and, if you do not recover your usual spirits sufficiently to stay longer with ease, make the best excuse you can for leaving us."



Language cannot convey an adequate idea of her manner while uttering this: none but an all-commanding beauty could have so enforced submission to all she said, without an attempt, on my part, to resist.

On entering the room, she observed, "that, as the poor Cavalier complained of a head-ache, she would not let me stay out longer in the open air; and, as a reward for my compliance, she had promised to sing me a song." With her assistance, I came off better than I expected. I would fain have been jealous, but could find no object.

At the next interview, she convinced me she was right. "Since your last departure for sea," she observed, "I have weighed and considered every thing concerning us. My mind was distressed by a train of uneasy apprehensions, but these being now past, I determined, by an examination of my heart, to learn at once whether it were possible to love, live, and be happy together. I found my love to be of so extravagant a cast, that, though



satisfied of your sincere love for me, I should grow jealous, and we should both be made miserable, if I ever discovered the sigh of regret for your native country or a lingering wish to return to it. I am, therefore, more reconciled now, and feel convinced, that, had you answered me according to my wishes and without the agitation I witnessed, although it would have gratified my love and pride for the time, I should not have been able to preserve the high opinion I entertain of you as an officer in the service of your country. Let us endeavour, therefore, to reconcile ourselves to that which appears irremediable, since neither of us can, with propriety and honour, give up country, religion, and connections."

There appeared so much truth and sound reason in all she said, that I did not attempt to combat it. It was agreed that I should continue my assiduities as usual, in which there was no difficulty: when by ourselves, however, I found much trouble in submitting to the dictates of reason and propriety; but a single

glance from her chastening eye produced its effect.

To her brother I had long acknowledged the fervency of my love for his sister, and I believe the whole family considered it as a settled thing, that would happen when we were a little older.

On our ship being ordered home, I told her brother that I felt myself too young to profess and apply seriously to his parents, until I had seen my own; that it would likewise require my obtaining leave, from the government of my country, to relinquish that service, with permission to enter the navy of the Grand Duke of Tuscany, (a subject that had often been discussed by us and pressed much upon me;) and that, as soon as these matters could be ascertained and settled, I would write to him and his sister.

Being much in attendance upon the captain on shore, from the fluency I had obtained in the Italian language, I spent much of my time with these kind friends; but it was accompanied with deep regret on my part, from an anticipation of the re-



sult; and, had I not been convinced that her resolution was irrecoverably fixed, I know not how I might have acted.

The carnival season in Italy is so well known and described by abler pens than mine, that, however highly I enjoyed it myself, I conceive it would be fruitless to attempt any thing novel on the subject. I entered most completely into the spirit of it; and, possessing a considerable share of vivacity, strength, and agility, I passed muster among the frolicsome youths tolerably well. At that time, an English naval uniform was a sure and pleasant passport into all good company, in every part of Italy: many of the natives, therefore, assumed the character under a mask, and I took no small pleasure in exposing their false colours, though it was sometimes attended with smart scuffles; but my little oaken towel, which I could handle pretty briskly when necessary, always carried me through.

While lying at anchor in the island of Cyprus, a Greek of some note, understanding we meant to sail for St. Jean



d'Acre, solicited, through the medium of the English resident at Cyprus, to be permitted to go with us. At this time, the plague was raging in most parts of the Levant, and his request would not have been listened to had he not been travelling to Jerusalem, whither our captain had a strong wish to accompany him, thinking the Greek's perfect knowledge of the country a good protection.

However, it was deemed a proper precaution to make him undergo a quarantine. His bed and bedding were accordingly placed on the ballast of the hold, where (excepting two hours each day that he was allowed to take air on the poop) he continued the four days we were on the passage. We came to an anchor at St. Jean d'Acre in the evening, and early the next morning the poor Greek was found dead, without having given the slightest intimation of his being indisposed.

No doubt was entertained that he died of the plague, and no time was lost in getting a rope round him and his bed-

ding, by which he was hoisted up the main hatchway with the stay-tackle, and then boused over the ship's side by another tackle from the yard-arm, and cut adrift, with a weight to sink him.

The alarm and consternation, in the whole ship's crew, were far beyond what an enemy ever so superior to ourselves could have produced. A consultation was held in the captain's cabin, to consider the best means of preventing the evil from spreading farther. Iron pots and tubs were placed securely on the ballast in the hold, in which every strong smelling combustible or ingredient in the ship was set fire to, and all hands readily submitted to be shut down under the hatches; the captain, two first lieutenants, and the doctor, remaining on deck.

It was not long before some of us that were below, and at length all, began to complain, exclaiming to those above, "that we should be suffocated." This not being attended to, some began to be outrageous, but their strength soon failed them, and numbers sunk down exhausted.



My friend B—— and I had, at the commencement of the fumigation, gone down and turned in upon our beds; and, as soon as I began to feel the effects, which from the burning of tobacco appeared the most insufferable, I turned my face down on my pillow, scarcely allowing myself any other air than that which I drew from it. This it was, I believe, which enabled me to support it better than others; for, on the hatchways being opened, I was the first to get on deck, though I had farther to travel than most of them. Many were obliged to be hauled up, being incapable of helping themselves; and poor B—— was not much better, (for I had to go down again and assist him,) which I attributed to the frequent opening of his mouth, when complaining so much of the suffocating effect. On my laughing afterwards at some of those that suffered considerably, they swore that I must have been born in the lower regions, and might consequently bid the devil defiance.

It was our turn next to give the captain, lieutenants, and doctor, their dose; which



was done very liberally, the dead-lights, ports, &c. being first well closed. They were confined the same length of time; and, when set at liberty, came out, gasping for breath, in a pitiable state, which reconciled those of the crew that had suffered so much below.

For a long time after this, fires were made in the day-time in the hold, to burn pitch, tar, turpentine, rosin, vinegar, tobacco, &c. finishing, towards evening, with such aromatic gums and herbs as the doctor procured for the purpose. The decks were likewise freely washed with vinegar, and all advised to smoke tobacco and keep a bit of the leaf in their mouth and nostrils: the latter I found was not in my power, therefore I substituted in its place a little fresh oakum.

Notwithstanding all this, we had three foreign sailors who died of the plague, and in so short a time as to persuade us they must have had the disorder before the Greek died. Two of them were on the sick list at the time of the fumigation, and the other followed a few hours after.

Contrary to the accounts we had heard at Cyprus, we found the plague raging at St. Jean d'Acre and along the whole coast of Syria, with the greatest violence. We made no longer stay, therefore, than we could help ; but long enough to have a little dispute with the Turkish governor, or bashaw, arising from the five French merchant-vessels that were lying there, most of whom had taken in cargoes of cotton and were ready to sail.

Through the French resident, they had applied to the bashaw, who was simple enough to send an order on board our ship, with directions not to sail for two days after these French merchant-vessels had left the port.

It is right, however, to remark, that the French, at that time carrying on a considerable traffic at St. Jean d'Acre, were well known and the English very little, which might induce the bashaw to treat us so cavalierly. Captain R—— sent back, by the same boat, a very spirited answer ; and there being no English resident to ensure its being faithfully deli-



vered and translated, he read it aloud before he delivered it, making one of our Greek sailors interpret its full meaning to the Turkish officer who came off with the order, that he might relate its contents to the bashaw. The substance was, that, unless we were molested, all due deference should be paid to the neutral port we were in, (which, by the bye, is a wide open roadsted); that, if any of the French vessels should leave the port before we were under weigh, he would allow the usual time by the law of nations before he sailed after them: but, if our ship got under sail first, and the bashaw ordered any guns to be fired at him from the fort, he would knock his old castle about his ears, and take or destroy every French vessel then lying there.

The Turk in the boat stroked his whiskers, looked very fierce, and seemed to swear most vehemently by Mahomet: on which, our tars gave three cheers, and our captain ordered a salute to be fired. The whole together operated sufficiently to convince the bashaw that we were not



to be frightened ; and, in the evening, the boat came off again, to acquaint our captain that the governor was satisfied with his intentions respecting the Frenchmen. But not so the French themselves ; they were fearful we meant to cut them out in the night, and therefore hauled all their vessels as close in shore as possible, and unbent their sails.

From the celebrity which this place has obtained since, in its defence by the gallant Sir Sidney Smith, with a handful of Englishmen, against the reputed all-subduing, but in truth the most cruel, unprincipled, marauder that has been permitted to harass this globe, I cannot refrain from observing, that, at the time we so defied the power of the bashaw, we really conceived, from the towering, Babel-like, ruinous, appearance of the place, that we could have executed what we threatened : but I now conclude we must have been greatly mistaken, which may, in some measure, be accounted for by the confined view we had of its strength, the effects of the plague on board as well as

on shore, preventing any close observation. Had I been called to give an opinion of its capability of defence, against any regular army, by a strong garrison, I should have answered, that I deemed it untenable.

It will not appear surprising that a youthful mind should at first look with a kind of reverential awe on places so much noted in Holy Writ as many that we then saw daily: Mount Lebanon, so famous for its cedars, of which produce it scarcely appeared to retain a vestige; St. Jean d'Acre, the antient Akron, where David is said to have played the fool before the king of Moab; so celebrated, besides, in the Crusades. These places, with Mount Carmel and others of inferior note, became at last so familiar to the eye as to produce a complete indifference about them.

Dreadful as the whole of this coast was from the ravages of the plague, I quitted it with a kind of regret, at not being able to visit Jerusalem, which I fully expected if Captain R—— had gone thither.



## CHAPTER VII.

*Sail from St. Jean d' Acre, fall in with and capture one of the French ships.*



ABOUT ten days after leaving St. Jean d'Acre, cruising along the coast of Egypt, we fell in with one of the largest and richest of our French friends whom we had left behind, and captured him. He had lost several of his men by the plague, while taking in his cargo; nevertheless, after a tedious quarantine, we thought him a good prize, and so he proved.

The prize being sent for Leghorn, with my friend B—— on board, he had the captain's permission to quit her after seeing her safe in port, if he could get on board any British cruiser bound up the Levant, for the chance of falling in with our ship, as the several prizes we had taken had reduced our number of officers: foreign seamen we could get in most ports.

It was several months, however, before



we saw him again, when he gave the following account of his adventures.

---

## CHAPTER VIII.

### *Anecdotes of Captain Patrick.*



THERE was a famous English privateer, at that time well known all over the Mediterranean; the *Fame* of Bristol, commanded by Captain Patrick. She was lying in Leghorn-roads at the time B—— went in, and was near sailing. Patrick was seldom out of quarantine, staying nowhere longer than to get water, provisions, or men, if wanted.

On being applied to, he gladly accepted B——'s proposal of doing duty as an officer, until they fell in with our ship. He was to go on board the *Fame* soon after dark in the evening, and the next morning they were to sail.

Patrick was a terror wherever he went,

being little better than a madman, regardless of the laws of quarantine or the country he was in ; there were but few places, therefore, at which he could latterly go on shore without apprehension.

Previous to B—— going with him, he had shot one of his guardas (a kind of revenue-officer put on board ships under quarantine) dead, for taking away the ship's jolly-boat to row himself to the quarantine-house, where he meant to complain against Captain Patrick for some ill usage. When Patrick was informed of his thus taking the boat, he ran on deck, and snatched up a loaded musket, swearing at the guarda, that, if he did not instantly return with the boat, he would fire at him : the guarda persevering, he fired and killed the man.

Captain Patrick, being accountable for every one on board his ship leaving her under quarantine, would have been enabled to make a better defence for this, than for various other complaints against him. He did not chuse, however, to take the chance, by surrendering for trial, as



required. And as, from what he could learn, the magistrates did not seem to admit of such pleas, it is probable enough he was privy to the following outrage committed by his second lieutenant on the night previous to their sailing.

The *Fame* had a felucca-tender to accompany her when cruising, which, in calms and light winds, could be manned with fifty hands for rowing and boarding. As soon as the evening was set in, his second lieutenant, with about fifty of his men, took the felucca and rowed a-shore, a few miles to the westward of Leghorn. Passing for the crew of another English ship then lying in the roads, not in quarantine, they were well received at a village, where they spent their time freely until midnight, when nothing would satisfy the tars, but they must have a lass each; and, as these lasses were at Leghorn and could not come to them, they were determined on going to the lasses, as Mahomet did to a mountain.

Between twelve and one, they reached the city gates, desired the officer on



guard to let them in, and on his refusal threatened to force their way. It appeared, afterwards, that the commissioned officer, who had the command at the gate, and should have been with his guard, had left it to the care of a non-commissioned officer for an hour or two, not suspecting any thing could occur to disturb his post, the gates of the city being shut at night more on the score of civil police than of military exigencies.

The sergeant demanding their motive, they plainly told him what they wanted, and promised, if he would let them pass peaceably, they would return as soon as they had saluted their girls, and would give the guard something handsome to drink. The sergeant, fearful of a disturbance while his officer was absent, and thinking it an innocent kind of a sailor-like frolic, admitted them. But the English lieutenant of the *Fame*, being apprehensive that he and his men might be caught in a trap, and finding himself more than thrice as strong as the guard, took possession of the gate by making the guard

prisoners for the time. One half of them then went and had their ramble, returning soon to relieve the rest, and brought wine and cordials to treat the guard. The last party who went on this frolic behaved ill; for, not content with visiting the ladies, who are licensed and live in a part of the town allotted to them, called by the English sailors, *Love-lane*, and *Scratch-alley*, they drank cordials until they were half crazy; and forcing some of the girls with them to the large square, called the Place, they gave such repeated English cheers as to awaken and alarm the whole neighbourhood. Before any knowledge could be had of the cause, or any measure taken to apprehend them, they retired to their companions at the gate; and, setting the guard at liberty, retreated with all haste to the felucca, and got on board the Fame.

Boats were sent off to all the ships in the roads, before day-light, to inquire for the authors: Captain Patrick, having learned the particulars, sent a note to the governor, owning they were his people, but that it was done without his privity, add-



ing, that he had no controul over his people while in their port and under quarantine, as they debarred his using force to prevent his boats leaving the ship. This was well enough for him to say, but all who knew Captain Patrick knew better.

At day-break, as the *Fame* was getting under weigh, another boat was sent off, ordering him to remain at anchor; but knowing he had now completely sold Leghorn, he disregarded the order and set sail. The fort was then ordered to fire at him, which he paid no more attention to than the order; and, on a shot passing through one of his sails, he hove the ship a little to, returned the salute by firing three shot at the fort, and with a brisk wind off shore, was soon out of their reach.

Complaints were sent to England, and the commanders of all the king's ships were ordered to take him out of his ship where ever they met with him : his letter of marque, authorizing him to make captures, was declared void, and instructions were



given to the British consuls in the ports of the Mediterranean, to seise all the prizes he might send in, and, if he went on shore, to have him arrested and sent home a prisoner.

Two or three valuable prizes were thus seised in different ports he had sent them to; and, before any of our ships of war fell in with him, after receiving such orders, he had the good luck to be informed of his danger by the master of an English brig, who told him he had been boarded about three hours before by a sloop of war, under colours of the Duke of Tuscany, in company with another sloop of war and a two-decker, under the same colours, who said they were cruising for the Fame, in hope of making Captain Patrick a prisoner. The master of the brig acquainted him with the various instructions sent from England, and added, that the officer who boarded him was a dirty scoundrel, having plundered him of his best compass and other articles, promising to pay him when he met him in port.

Two of the captains of these Tuscan

men of war were British, and had had such repeated quarrels with Patrick, when on shore at Leghorn, that an inveterate hatred subsisted between them: they rejoiced, therefore, when they received such orders. But Patrick laughed at them while he had sea-room, knowing that the Fame would sail round them all, nor would he have hesitated at fighting the two sloops, though each of them equal in metal and numbers to the Fame.

Patrick inquired their course; and learning they were under an easy sail, he pursued their track and made for them before night-fall sufficiently near to ascertain who they were. He continued overhauling them, under an easy sail, until between eleven and twelve, when, passing the sternmost to windward, he just hailed him in French, so as to receive an answer in the same language, and ran close up on the weather quarter of the two-decker, the captain of which was his mortal antagonist.

Tuscany not being at war at the time, the ships were not in perfect readiness.



Captain Patrick had hauled up his courses, and was every way prepared ; hailing this ship also in French, he received a like answer ; when damning their French souls, he ordered them to strike to the Fame, Captain Patrick, and immediately poured a broadside into him. At the same time, putting the ship about, before either of the vessels could recover from so unexpected an attack, he repassed the sternmost ; and with the same summons to surrender, he fired his other broadside into her, then making sail, he was out of sight before they well knew what was the matter.

Patrick was aware he had a desperate gauntlet to run through the British cruisers, but he likewise knew that few ships could sail faster. Keeping a wary distance, therefore, from all ships of size, he cruised until he took a rich polacre, which he unloaded at sea of most of her cargo on board the Fame: and, in his way with her to Tunis, he captured another, and took them both into Tunis with him. He there sold both their cargoes, and the Fame he sold to the Dey. To his of-



licers and crew he gave up the two vessels that were brought in, to convey them where they liked, fitting them well out. He made presents to his officers and told them he would make over to them and the crew all his share of the many valuable prizes they had taken and sent into different ports for sale, both before and during this cruise, in lieu of which, he appropriated to himself the two cargoes brought in and sold at Tunis. And thus he settled all farther trouble about being caught and punished.

It was afterwards reported that he turned Mahometan; and, by another account, that he sent to Rome, and made sufficient interest to get the Pope's pardon by turning Roman Catholic. He must have made a worthy proselyte to either.

My friend B—— crossed over the Mediterranean, in one of those polacre prizes, to Zant, where the polacre and another of the Fame's prizes were seised by the British consul; nor was it thought that the men or officers of the Fame would ever be benefited by any more of the many

prizes she had taken, than what had already been distributed and paid.

B——, making himself known to the British consul at Zant, was kindly entertained by him, until we arrived about three weeks after. His intention was to get on board the first English ship of war that arrived, which luckily proved to be the ship he belonged to. He was truly happy at rejoining us, observing, he was cured of privateering, though Captain Patrick had treated him much better than he did his own officers.

What has been here related is confined to the eccentric character and conduct of Captain Patrick; but there were many other anecdotes told by B—— that amused us at the time. Among them was the following, which I have frequently related, and have heard it repeated by others, in the course of half a century. The origin may now possibly be disputed; I only aver to have heard it, as thus stated.

The Fame had a very smart engagement with a French privateer of greater force in the Gulph of Lyons. They were known



to each other by repute, and had mutually threatened to fight, if they should meet. But it is not the interest of privateers to fight for victory only; when, therefore, they did thus fall in together, an unavoidable brush took place, and several were killed and wounded on both sides. They separated and lay-to to refit, neither running away nor in a hurry to renew the fight; and, a calm coming on while at a respectable distance, they continued so until night, when each steered their own course and claimed the victory. It was during this suspense that the surgeon of the *Fame* went round to examine the killed and wounded, with a few seamen to attend him, in order to remove the latter down to the cockpit and throw the former overboard. It happened, in his haste, that he imagined one, who lay severely wounded and insensible, to be dead, and ordered him to be thrown overboard. Two of his attendants were about executing the order, and were moving him along for that purpose, one of them observing, "here's lying Dick gone at last!" The motion and



voice of his shipmate brought him to a little and he faintly exclaimed, " Jack, don't launch me overboard, I a'nt dead." " Why, you lying son of a b—h," says Jack, " who, do you think, knows best, the doctor or you?" And perhaps it was fortunate for Dick that the doctor, not being out of hearing, returned and sent him to the cockpit.

---

## CHAPTER IX.

### *The Island of Lampadocia.*

I OUGHT not to conceal a strange romantic conceit I entertained at one time to leave the ship and turn hermit. This was at one of our visits to the Island of Lampadocia. There were no more than three inhabitants that we could find upon the island; two of them pretty antient. They stiled themselves Mahometan Religiosos, living there as hermits, but abounding with the good things they reared and cultivated. Their situation, full half a mile from the shore, was beautifully romantic; and their

habitation was formed by a rude front, built up near the entrance of a cavern, and appeared to have other apartments besides the one which they only permitted us to enter. At a small distance opposite, they had another place similar to it, but less, which was called their mosque, or chapel ; in the middle of which was a large coffin, elevated from the ground, with lamps burning, and where they said one of them continually watched and prayed, &c.

Doubts arose in some of our minds whether they were really Turks, or whether there were not more inhabitants, and we very strongly suspected them to have females concealed. Captain R——, however, gave strict orders that they should be in no way molested, and what poultry and fruit they could spare was paid for. They had a few patches of ground, inclosed by walls built with loose stones, where they grew corn, and kept a few sheep that were in good condition.

All the island besides was a wilderness, with abundance of sheep, wild as mountain goats. These were reckoned fair



game to shoot or run down, in which sport our clothes and skins were well torn, and many laughable incidents occurred with the sailors. We got plenty of the sheep, but they were only fit to make broth of, having scarcely a morsel of flesh upon their bones.

---

## CHAPTER X.

### *Adventure in Corsica.*

WHEN ordered home to England, most of us quitted the Mediterranean seas, where we had been cruising so long, with regret.

On sailing from Leghorn the last time, we ran close in with Corsica, and were so long becalmed, as to hoist our boat out and send it ashore for the chance of procuring live stock, eggs, wine, and fruit, though but few houses were visible.

I was one of the party. We landed in



a small cove; and, leaving two hands to take care of the boat, ascended a long sloping hill, at the top of which was a high stone wall, over which hung large clusters of tempting grapes.

We went on the left, in hopes of finding an entrance or some house. There was no path-way, but we walked nearly a quarter of a mile until we came to a large old mansion, where we gave a loud halloo. Some women and children soon appeared; but, on seeing such outlandish figures as no doubt we appeared to them, they ran in faster than they came out. In a few minutes, however, two male animals made their appearance, in a dress nearly resembling what we may picture to ourselves of Robinson Crusoe and his man. They were father and son, dressed in jackets and a kind of short trowsers, made of goats' skins, with the hair outwards, tied with thongs, and hanging rather loose. In a belt round their waist they had each a pair of large pistols, with a long snig-a-snee knife at their sides. The father had large mustachios, and the only

things of modern appearance were their Leghorn chip hats.

As soon as the old man saw us, he exclaimed, "Ah! Signor God dam, John Anglis!" We soon became acquainted. He was a goat-herd and swine-herd, and frequently took his goods to Leghorn for sale; where, often seeing English sailors, and having become acquainted with their general character, he seemed no way displeased at our visit, especially when he learned our errand.

We found we were too far off from any village or place to purchase wine, or any thing else but hogs and goats; and, not to go back quite empty, we went with him to bargain for a few hogs. His son went out and whistled a considerable number of them into a large enclosure: during which time, he himself regaled us with a flaggon or rather calabash or two of common wine, while every female and child in the house continued prying and looking at us as great curiosities.

We accompanied the herdsman, who continued equipped just as we saw him



at first. The grunTERS appeared familiar enough with him and his son, as they walked about in the midst of them, but they eyed and were as shy of us as the old man's family within doors; both looking on us, no doubt, as the strangest animals they had ever seen.

Having agreed for the price by weight, as they were, and pointed out one as about the size and condition that would suit best, we were not a little surprised to see the old herdsman take out one of his long pistols, and, cocking it, he instantly shot the hog dead, and his son as directly drew his snig-a-snee and cut the animal's throat across, so as to half separate his head from the body. The father, loading his pistol again, desired us to point out others, when we informed him we wanted to take them on board alive. Selecting such as we liked, they were separated from the rest and secured by a bass-rope, tying them to each other by one leg and by the snout. We agreed likewise to take the dead hog, on their conveying it to the boat, and by the weight of that to pay for

the others. Examining the hog to see how it was shot, we found the ball entered just under the ear, and were told that both he and his son could as readily and correctly shoot any number of them.

We inquired to whom the long high wall belonged, and whether it was in our power to get any of those fine grapes we had seen. He said, the wall enclosed large grounds, belonging to a great signor, who was very proud and surly, and doubted whether he would part with any if we applied; and that it was a considerable distance round to the mansion, the contrary way to that which we had come.

As it would take up some time to get the porkers to the boat, we resolved to try and set off for that purpose; but, on coming again within sight of the luscious fruit, we thought, if we helped ourselves, it might save a deal of trouble, provided any one could be hoisted high enough to reach them.

Being as light and active as any, I was appointed the climber, and my ladder was formed thus: on the shoulders of two,



that stood on the ground, was hoisted a third, who with his arms rested against the wall. Climbing upon his shoulders, I reached the top; and, plucking such bunches of grapes as were within reach, I dropped them down. Could we have been content with gathering them thus, by removing my ladder, &c. in all probability we should have escaped unperceived with our plunder: but, having hold of a stout branch of the vine, I made a spring and climbed to the top of the wall. The inside appeared more like a wilderness than a garden, but I could see various fruit-trees in all directions; such as oranges, pomegranates, prickly pears, figs, &c. with a great quantity of grapes; the latter seemingly cultivated at a distance from the wall, and kept low. The few, that were against the wall, appeared to have grown there by chance.

Perceiving that it would not be difficult to get down by the vine on the inside, and up again, I acquainted my ship-mates, with the prospect I had of the land of promise, if any of them were disposed to

accompany me, by fetching a rope from the boat, the end of which I could fasten to the vine for them to climb up by on the outside. Two of them took what grapes I had thrown down to the boat, and soon returned with a rope.

In the mean time, I gathered and dropped a considerable quantity more; talking and laughing with my brother-officer below, of the advantage I should have if any beautiful *dulcinea* were to make her appearance and claim the assistance of such a knight, to relieve her from the durance of so vile a Goth.

The design was, for three more to climb over the wall; and, when we had thrown over as many oranges, &c. as we liked, to return and convey all to the boat, which, from the vicinity of the fruit-trees to the part of the wall we were at, and not discovering any thing like a building near, we concluded would soon be accomplished.

I had but just fastened the rope, when I heard a rustling kind of noise behind me, I turned my head, and discovered several of these *Robinson-Crusoe* looking fellows,



creeping slowly along, bent almost to the ground, with each of them a cursed snig-a-snee in their hands. Concluding they would have to climb over the wall after me, I slipped down the rope in a moment: then, telling my comrades that there was a legion of devils at our heels, just broke from the herd of swine, we all scampered away like brave thieves, both ashamed and afraid of what we were doing. Hearing them shout, we turned our heads and were surprised to find them pursuing us, before we thought they could well have got over the wall. It was now the devil take the hindmost, or every one for himself.

Our boatmen, observing the chace, thought something must be wrong; and, while shoving the boat on shore to receive us, got the fire-arms that were in the boat, in readiness. Being among the foremost of the runaways to jump into the boat, I snatched up a musket and fired it over the heads of the pursuers, who were drawing near to those a-stern of me: this very effectually checked their farther pursuit, and we found ourselves all safe in the boat.

Had we been acting in a right cause, we should not have run away until we had fairly tried our strength with the enemy; as it was, we plainly shewed how soon the bravest may be converted into cowards, by doing what cannot be justified.

We could now, in return, have driven them back and brought away the stolen property; but we recovered our wits with our arms, and, forbearing to fire when we could have made fatal execution among them, (though strongly called upon so to do by those who had been closest pressed by them,) we convinced them, by relanding, that we were not afraid.

Soon after this, our swine-herdsman and son made their appearance with the hogs; and, joining our pursuers, after a short conversation they came forward, and every thing was explained to their satisfaction as a mere sailor-like, unmeaning, frolic. Yet they made no scruple of saying they would have slain every one whom they could have overtaken.

We learned, likewise, that there was an old gateway in the wall, on the right hand,



which we had not seen, by which they came so quick upon us. We farther understood that the discovery of our being there was by a vigneron, or vine-dresser; who, being much frightened at seeing me on the wall, talking in a strange language, crept away to give the alarm. Nor did they hesitate to say, that, had they been fortunate enough to kill one or more such heretics as the Anglis were said to be, their priests (as we understood afterwards) would have well rewarded them.

Making allowances for prejudice, we reconciled ourselves to intentions not executed; but, as we were the first aggressors, we gave the fellows a chequin, and not only had the grapes that were gathered, on which they placed no value, but received plenty of oranges, &c. from within the walls, which they cared as little for. The grapes in the vineyard were held sacred, all the rest their signor regarded not as to value, though he would punish with death any one detected in gathering without his permission. Yet they understood he was very favorably disposed to the

Anglis, notwithstanding they were heretics.

We paid our friendly herdsman, and got safe on board with a large cargo for little money.

## CHAPTER XI.

*Take a xebeque\* on our passage to Gibraltar.*



RUNNING along the coast of Barbary, we fell in with two stout French xebeques; who, not conceiving what we were, ran boldly down to us, when a very smart action ensued. Plying the largest vessel closely, she was obliged to strike her colours; and the other, hauling her wind,

\* Xebeck, xebeque, or even chebeque, or chebeck, are names variously and indifferently used and given to the same kind of vessel, as they belong to the French, Spaniards, Portuguese, Algerines, &c. &c.



made off. In this engagement, I received a flesh wound in my left arm by a musket-ball.

We took our prize into Gibraltar, where we first heard of the death of old King George. We made but a short stay, being under strict quarantine from our foul bill of health; then set sail for the land of cakes and ale, after an absence of more than two years.

## CHAPTER XII.

### *Earthquake off Lisbon.*

WHEN off Lisbon we had a foul wind, blowing hard all night and the next forenoon, when it suddenly dropped to a calm, leaving a heavy cross popling swell.

The people were all at dinner, when a general alarm spread quickly throughout the ship, above and below, occasioned by

a violent tremulous motion of the ship, as if likely to shake to pieces. The guns and carriages actually rattled on the decks; and, in our more deliberate thoughts afterwards, we could compare the agitation of the ship to nothing but that of a vessel driven violently by a very strong current, or tide, over a hard gravelly bottom, which she raked all the way.

The consternation in every countenance was stronger than language can describe, for no one could divine the cause, though all expected immediate destruction. A rumbling noise accompanied the agitation, arising gradually but speedily from the bottom upwards. It lasted between two and three minutes, subsided, and left us as if nothing had happened.

The first thing ordered was to sound the well; all was right there. The next was to try for soundings, but none were found with more than two hundred fathoms of line. During this, the gunner was called on the quarter-deck and examined as to the powder-magazine, and when any one was last there. He declared that no person what-



ever had been there that day. The first lieutenant was ordered to go down with the gunner and examine the magazine and all below, and I was ordered to attend them. We found every thing as it should be.

In the course of this search, the gunner, who was an old man, swore he knew what it was, and affirmed it to be an earthquake. This account, added to his being an Irishman, made us both laugh heartily at him, although our errand was not of a very laughable nature.

In making his report to the captain, the lieutenant told him what the gunner said of its being an earthquake, which created another laugh on deck. However, the old gunner was called aft and directed to explain himself. He said he was on board a merchant-ship, lying at anchor in the port, at the time of the great earthquake at Lisbon, in 1755; and, from the effect it had on that vessel, he concluded this to have proceeded from a similar cause. There was no denying the justice of this remark, yet not an officer on board could be per-

suaded it was probable; and, from arguing upon it, we deemed it impossible, from the immense body and weight of water, more than two hundred fathoms deep, that any thing afloat on the surface could be so violently and strangely affected by the concussion of the earth beneath.

I have noticed the consternation that so strongly and generally affected all on board during the shock : the rumbling noise excepted, all was still as death. But, the instant that orders were given by the captain to sound the well and let the top-sail halyards run, the difference between the British and foreign seamen on board was remarkably conspicuous. The former jumped about as alert as ever, seemingly rejoiced to be recovered from the panic ! while the other poor miserable-looking dogs of Italians, and other Roman-Catholics, we had shipped up the Mediterranean, were most of them on their knees and some flat on their faces, crossing themselves as true devotees. Many of them were known to have repeatedly committed murder and every species of villainy ;



which sins, having purchased absolution from, they were hardened and wicked enough to boast of.

I remember one fellow in particular, who acknowledged the commission of seven murders, from all which he had been absolved by his priest. This very scoundrel, and others of the same stamp, as soon as they could open their mouths after the general panic ceased, roared most lustily to Saint Antony and other saints for help ; nor could any thing induce them to move, until the boatswain, out of all patience with the most wicked reprobates we had on board, swore he had a saint would save and cure them sooner than Saint Antony or all the saints in their calendar : this was Saint Rattan, whose aid he and his mates invoked so heartily as to recover them all in a very short time ; liberally and literally bestowing crosses for them to carry on their shoulders for some days.

We were far out of sight of land ; and, when the wind sprung up again, some hours after we had been so alarmed, it was as foul as before. We therefore

steered for the land; and, towards evening of the following day, met a Dutch dogger, the master of which informed us, that, early in the morning, he left the port of Lisbon, where, the day before, they experienced a dreadful earthquake, that had done considerable mischief on shore. The particulars he had not heard, being anxious to get away with his vessel, as she was loaded, and the inhabitants too much alarmed to attend to any thing but their own immediate concerns.

On remarking the time when they felt the shock at Lisbon, and we felt it at sea, our vain reasonings upon improbabilities and impossibilities were obliged to yield to our old gunner's experience of facts. Wonderful, indeed, must have been the concussion of the earth beneath the immense body of waters, to have caused so powerful an effect on our ship. It served us for much argument, the remainder of our voyage, whether what we experienced ought to be called an earthquake or water-quake; but we were not sufficient philosophers to decide the question.

In the British Channel, we again viewed



old England ; and with such sensations as those only can feel who have experienced a long first absence from their native home.

The exclamation of my mess-mate B—evinced an eccentricity of character difficult to account for. I must premise, that he had been sent to sea by his father, on account of his ungovernable wildness at home ; and, when last at Leghorn, had received a favour, from some of the ladies he had been acquainted with, that he had not gotten rid of : this formed the ground of the following exclamation, on first seeing the land. “ By God,” said he, “ I shall disappoint the old boy after all ; for he sent me out as a *sacrifice* and I am come home a *burnt offering*.”

I wish it here to be understood, that I am not relating things as they ought to be, but as they were.

## CHAPTER XIII.

*Shipwreck.*

WE were bound for Portsmouth; but, the wind blowing fresh down Channel, we ran into Torbay, where, no sooner was it known that we had had the plague on board, though considerably more than a year before, and had repeatedly been under quarantine since, than the country all around was so alarmed that no boats would come near us.

The only illness we had on board, of any note, was the scurvy: for this, after a tedious passage, the best remedy we could obtain for the people was vegetables and fresh provisions; and, finding no likelihood of procuring such relief where we were, our captain determined to weigh anchor and bear away for Plymouth, as the wind had every appearance of continuing to blow hard from the eastward.



Keeping pretty close in with the land, we were running under top-gallant sails, top-sails, and fore-sail; when, just abreast of the Mewstone and opening the ships of war lying in Plymouth Sound, our ship, then under an easy sail, most unexpectedly, and to the astonishment of all on board, struck so forcibly on a splinter of rock as to fill with water almost instantly.

All around the ship we found two or three fathoms of water more than was wanted, and on the outer, or larboard, side very deep soundings. Guns were immediately fired, and a flag of distress hoisted in our main-top-mast shrouds, which fortunately could be seen by some of the ships in the Sound.

That the ship would be lost appeared inevitable, within a few minutes after she struck. The hurry and confusion consequent is indescribable: the number of foreign sailors we had on board, threw all into disorder, at a moment when self-preservation became the law that superseded all other laws, but those which prudence

pointed out to the cool and brave as the best means of saving their lives.

In vain were orders given to hoist out the boats with care and dispatch, as the only probable way by which the ship's company could be saved. The ship was settling fast in the water, and for a while it was doubtful to which side she would incline in sinking : the great depth of water to seaward created dreadful apprehensions of the consequence if she capsized or settled on her larboard beams. A few of the guns were run over to the starboard side, which possibly gave the turn in our favour, and afforded some consolation in the hope that part of the ship might remain above water.

The wind was now abated and the sea considerably smoother ; but our hopes of escape, by means of the boats, were soon destroyed by the ungovernable haste of the foreign sailors, who acted like madmen : their violent strength, in attempting to launch the boats that were in the ship, stove and rendered them wholly unserviceable, for they filled and sunk along-



side. We had now only one small boat, which was towing a-stern at the time of our shipwreck, with a lad in her. A boatswain's mate, observing three Italians lowering themselves into this boat from the stern of the ship, followed and slid down by the boat-rope before they cast her adrift: and, being a resolute fellow, he assumed and took the command of the boat. Their intention was to have rowed away and landed where they could, regardless of those they left behind. The boatswain's mate very prudently cast the boat off, and, rowing a short distance, lay to on his oars, a-breast of the ship.

The ship was now setting fast over on her starboard side, and our fate very uncertain. Orders were given to cut away the masts and endeavour to make a raft with the wreck, but they were attended to by none but the officers themselves and the best of our English seamen; for, in this short time, it was astonishing to see the numbers that were rapidly proceeding to a state of intoxication and mischief. Many had continued below as long as

possible, breaking into the captain's, officers, and ship's, stores, where there was abundance of wine, &c. Whole chests, half chests, and flasks innumerable, were floating about in all directions.

About this time, I saw Captain R—— whisper to the first and second lieutenants; and then, throwing off his coat, jump into the sea with his gold-laced hat on. Knowing his courage so well, I was at first amazed to see him as it were desert his ship's company; but he soon made his design evident, by swimming towards the boat. The boatswain's mate discovered who it was by his iron-bound hat, as the sailors call it, and took him up. Taking the command and direction of the boat on himself, he had her rowed near enough the ship to declare and explain his intentions.

The main and fore masts were now cut away, and it appeared as if the ship had done settling, leaving her larboard side, from her midships-aft, out of water. This was nearly all the dependance we had to save us from drowning, even those who could swim. I was pretty expert at this,



as an exercise of pleasure ; but, as the shortest distance to the Mewstone Rock appeared nearer three than two miles, and the wind rather against, there was but a faint hope of any being able to save themselves by swimming.

It was necessary to keep the boat far enough from the wreck to prevent the men from leaping into and sinking her. The raft, that was proposed to be made from the wreck of masts, yards, and spars, could only be considered as a *dernier resort* to save from instant drowning, should the ship sink much farther down, or the flood tide overflow the wreck before the people could be conveyed to shore ; for, the wind blowing rather off land, there was danger of the raft drifting out to sea. However, the off-shore wind favoured us one way, by affording smoother water and enabling the boat to carry more people.

The management of this arduous task, of conveying the whole ship's crew from the wreck to the rock by repeated trips, was undertaken by the captain. It may seem strange that he should begin to take

those first that could swim. At about a ship's length from the wreck, he ordered those who could swim, one at a time, as called for, to drop into the water and swim to the boat, when they were taken in; but, if any attempted it without being so ordered, they were refused and compelled to swim back to the wreck. When the boat had as many as she could safely swim with, they rowed to the rock, landing all but the captain and a lad, who together rowed off again to the wreck.

It appeared a tedious time to those waiting her return, more especially to those who did not assist in making a raft.

Two sloops that were coming out, seeing our distress, tried to work to windward to our assistance; but in vain, as both wind and tide were against them.

While our own boat was returning from the first trip she made to the Mewstone Rock, we saw five boats rowing out from the harbour and making towards us. This renovated our spirits; and the captain, arriving with the boat, picked up a flask or two of Florence wine, of which there was



plenty floating about, and refreshed himself and the lad against their arrival.

During the time that the captain made his first trip to the rock, some of those, who were sitting on the after part of the wreck, said they heard some of the captain's Canary-birds singing in the cabin; from this circumstance, it occurred, that it was possible to get in and save some of his papers, &c. B—— and I volunteered the attempt together: stripping ourselves, we swam to the stern; and, forcing the cabin-window that was out of water, got in and handed out a few light boxes, books, and papers, floating about; we also saved the two remaining poor Canary-birds that were together in one cage, where the water had not reached.

On the captain being informed of this transaction, he was much elated, as one of the boxes and some of the papers were of considerable consequence. He then requested me to convey them to him in the boat, which I did, and was about returning to the wreck, when he told me to get in and stay with the boat. I observed that

I was without my clothes and hoped he would permit me to return, as B—— and I had solemnly pledged ourselves to each other not to separate, but take our chance together. He then ordered B—— to the boat with me, but I returned to the wreck first; when, tying our clothes up in one bundle, we lashed our little *protégés* in their cage on the top; and, steadying the bundle a-float between us, we got to the boat and put our clothes on just as the headmost boat of the five came near enough to speak.

It was a captain of one of the ships of war in his barge; who, having discerned our distress, had rowed off to assist with other boats that were coming out: but, as soon as he learned who we were, he doubted whether it was not more than his commission was worth to take any of us in; for the report at Plymouth, from Torbay, was, that more than half the ship's company had died of the plague, and the rest were dying.

The other boats arriving, a consultation was holden within hearing, but at a very



respectful distance, what was best to be done. The result was, for the officers and crew of two of their boats to be taken into the other, and the two empty boats to be turned a-drift for our use, promising to stay by us to see if farther help was necessary.

We were still obliged to use the same precaution in taking the people from the wreck: those who could swim, swam off to the boats; and the others, laying hold of the end of a boat-hook that was handed to them, dropped into the water and were hauled in. Many of the foreigners, nearly insensible from their state of intoxication, and half-dead with fear and cold, (being the middle of March,) would have perished for want of exertion, if left to themselves. They laid down in the bottom of the boats, in spite of being trodden upon and kicked, to rouse them to a little exertion, bellowing out their prayers to the saints to preserve them, amidst curses on the brave fellows who were really saving them.

After many hours incessant toil to such

as looked the danger full in the face, we succeeded in conveying the whole of the ship's company to the rock. The evening was then setting in, cold and frosty, and no shelter on the rock, excepting a very small kind of watch-hut, that would not contain more than seven or eight people to lie down close together.

Almost the whole of us were completely soaked with sea water, and much exhausted for want of any other nourishment than wine since breakfast. A few wet sails were brought on shore at the last trip which the boats made, and this was all the covering we had for the following night, except the hut before-mentioned. Some chests of wine were likewise brought on shore, this benefit having arisen out of the bad conduct of those who had broken open the store rooms below, whence some floated to the hatchways and some drifted away.

Indeed, in any other situation, the circumstance of the wine drifting away and passing near the boats that came out to our assistance, might have afforded much mer-



riment, in seeing the men-of-war's men in those boats making sham kind of snatches with their hands at the wine as it passed by, without daring to touch a flask; their officers in the boats giving the strongest orders, with a vigilant look-out, to prevent their falling under the same laws of quarantine that we were. Yet I believe that the sailors themselves (judging from the curses they vented at their hard fate in not being permitted to embrace so inviting an opportunity) would have run all hazards of swallowing the plague with the wine, and possibly some of them envied *our* situation.

Excruciatingly severe as our sufferings certainly were during a sharp frosty night, yet our apprehensions exceeded them, for many expected to be nearly, if not quite, frozen to death before morning. B——'s clothes and mine not being so wet, we continued upon our feet, walking about till all the rest had laid down.

The captain had fairly worked his other clothes tolerably dry, and his coat had been brought to him much the same.

Those officers, who had continued with the wreck to the last, came also on shore tolerably well off. These, as many as could, occupied the hut. All the rest stowed, as well as they could, under the wet sails when it grew dark.

Observing a warmth to come from the hut, to which there was no door, B—— and I determined to take our station just on the outside of the door-way of the hut, and accordingly we spread a stay-sail, which we had secured, with our feet entering the door-way. This position, as to our feet, we preferred, because we knew, that the North-American Indians, when hunting in the woods, and obliged to lie down on the snow, always lie with their feet to the fire which they make, as the surest means of keeping themselves warm when asleep; and to this measure we were the more inclined from the strong effluvia that accompanied the warm steam which issued forth. From the complaints of all the next morning, we had reason to think ours was the most comfortable roost of any, though not a bed of down.



The captain and officers within the hut were the first to stir in the morning, and I believe had the worst birth of any, being half stifled.

At day-light, the scene was gloomy, the prospect awful. A barren rock, tenanted by shipwrecked sailors, lying about in different groups, huddled as close to one another as possible in order to gain heat, and covered over by sail-cloth, from which arose a steam equal to any I ever noticed from a hot bed. The heat thus generated by their bodies, and confined by a thick wet sail, had brought them into a comparative state of comfort to what they were in when first lying down, half perished with wet and cold: it was altogether a strange gloomy sight.

On mustering, none were found missing. The captain ordered all hands to kneel down and return thanks to God for their preservation; mentally, or aloud, as they liked best, and as their various religions taught them. I believe I may venture to assert, that never did a congregation more unanimously and fervently join in an act

of devotion, thankful for their preservation, and earnest in prayer for further aid, for the prospect still before us was awful.

Those, who first arose, walked silently away, in meditation, without entering into discourse until the whole had risen. The captain then made a short address, recommending patience and sobriety as the surest means of assisting ourselves and obtaining relief from others.

Provisions we had none, and we were doubtful whether any could be recovered from the wreck. Our greatest hope of this aid (and our wants became very urgent) was, that some vessel might be sent round with provisions from Plymouth. We knew ourselves to be in another perilous state from the exaggerated reports of our bill of health: and that, in attempting to escape by getting from the rock to the land, we should, to a certainty, be treated by the country-people as mad dogs, and shot or knocked on the head.

This was confirmed in the afternoon by a row-boat, sent to inform us that provisions would be sent and landed on a cer



tain part of the rock the following day, when the captain and one person beside might appear there at a distance sufficient to converse; but that any attempt to leave the rock, excepting to the wreck and back, would be fatal. The revenue-officer, who came out with this boat, was informed of our very calamitous situation respecting provision, which it seemed they did not know or think of, as, from the reports of the men-of-war's boats of the abundance of wine, they conceived we had some of the ship's provision likewise. However, we had not been idle from the earliest in the morning, until this boat informed us what we had to trust to.

One party scoured the rock to hunt for water, which at last was found, drizzling gently from a crevice in the rock, but soon lost again. The first substitute for a reservoir was a hat, or a Dutch cap, then in general use among sailors; but, before the day was out, a good sized bason was picked in the rock beneath, sufficient to dip from. This was a great relief to us, as fresh water was infinitely more valuable

than the wine. It was difficult to keep the men from fighting for their turn to lie down and drink.

The boats were well manned and sent off to the wreck as early as possible, to procure every necessary article that could be got at; provisions in particular. We found the ship had parted near the middle, with her head much sunk. Wine and oil we found in plenty, as it floated so readily; and every care was taken to guard the people from making too free with the former, on stomachs so completely empty.

We had sent the boats back to the rock one trip, loaded with more sails, and towing several yards, masts, and spars, with plenty of rope, to employ the people on the rock in erecting tents: they now returned with the welcome intelligence of a small spring of water, and brought off a few flasks filled with this most delicious of all liquors, the value of which is not known to those who never suffered by an entire want of it. The quantity was too small to allow of drinking it pure, though most desirable; it was therefore emptied



into a tub that was floating about, (first rinsing the tub with wine to clear it from salt water,) and we were obliged to add wine, to enable every man at the wreck to drink nearly one pint, making two draughts, or rather sippings, which made it much more beneficial than swallowing it at one draught. How much did we envy those who had been on shore with the boats, and drank it pure at the spring-head!

While we were freighting the boats for the third trip, a cask was hauled up from the wreck by the boat-hooks, which, to our very great joy, contained Leghorn dollars, (biscuits, so called up the Straits,) infinitely more prized by us than if they had been Mexican or silver dollars. The head of the cask was soon knocked out: in fact, it was nearly burst by the swelling of the biscuits, which, notwithstanding their being completely soaked with seawater, were eaten voraciously. It was not long, however, before some one thought of the sweet oil we had in such abundance, which, being poured over the soaked briny biscuit, when broken to pieces

in a wooden bowl and stirred up, furnished us with a dainty meal, which we highly enjoyed.

Understanding, by this time, that it would be nearly twenty-four hours before any provision would be brought to us from Plymouth, we dressed a proportionate part of the cask of biscuit in the same way, and sent it to those on the rock, where it proved equally welcome.

Being moderate weather, we gathered together articles of necessity, and returned early in the evening to the rock; where, notwithstanding the great relief received from the water and biscuit, many were disposed to mutiny, declaring they had better take the chance of being shot than starved.

A kind of canvas huts, or tents, being erected, sufficient to shelter us all, the old hovel was converted into a warehouse, where the wine, &c. was placed, and a tent, large enough for the captain and officers, fixed in front of the door-way. Fires were also made with the brush-wood found on the rock; and, having a kettle



or two from the ship, wine was heated and served out, together with an equal share, to every man, of a few boxes of sweet-meat, or preserved fruit, that had been taken up from the wreck. Compared with the past, therefore, we laid in clover the following night.

Very little more could be gathered from the wreck the next day; and, soon after mid-day, a large sailing-boat brought us plenty of provision. Our troubles now appeared to cease, and we did nothing but cook, eat, drink, and enjoy ourselves; regardless of what the people of the provision-boats related, that not a soul of us would be suffered to land and remain in England, but a vessel was to be provided for us to sail back again.

On the following day, our uncertainties were put to rest by orders, from the Admiralty, that a large French prize-privateer should be sent round to receive us, provided with what was necessary: on board of which vessel we were to perform quarantine in Yam-river, to the eastward of the Mewstone Rock.

A few days after this, a gale of wind from the south-west most completely broke up and dispersed what was left of the wreck. Some few of the chests, &c. that floated on her breaking up, drifted into Yam-river and were picked up by our boats; but more drifted on shore in our sight, whither we durst not go, though we saw the west-country men and women ready to pillage and plunder every thing they could lay hands on, in spite of the plague or any thing else.

I soon received letters from my friends; and, among them, pressing invitations from a near relation to quit the sea and live with him: having no children nor likelihood of any, he wished to adopt me for his heir, and fix me in a business of considerable note, on the River Thames, by which he had already made a pretty fortune. This was too good an offer to be refused hastily, although I did not much like to quit the service I was in; I therefore answered, generally, that, when released from quarantine, I would meet my friends and consult.



From the circumstances attending our shipwreck, particularly having neither baggage nor clothes of any kind, except those we had on our backs at the time, our quarantine was considerably shortened, and happy enough we were to land once more on good English ground; thus finishing my first voyage, or early Struggles in Life.

---

## CHAPTER XIV.

*Land at Plymouth, decline a promising good offer to live on shore, to sea again, at the attack of the Havannah and re-taking of Newfoundland.*

B——, myself, and another young man, agreed to travel homeward together. Our appearance was much against us when first entering an inn, our clothes being both ragged and shabby; and, had we not made trowsers for ourselves, from some of the ship's sails, we might have been taken

for heathen philosophers, as our posteriors would have been seen through our pocket holes. All this we laughed at; and, having obtained a supply of cash from our agents, we determined to travel to London as we were, with the addition of linen, which we soon provided. A post chaise served us all; we made no haste, nor abridged ourselves of any enjoyment on the road. At parting, B—— and I renewed assurances of friendship.

Not long after my return home, by the advice of my father and mother, I consented to live with her brother. I soon discovered that he and his wife did not agree very cordially; and, after unhinging my mind from my original pursuits, by an unprofitable waste of time, (except gaining local knowledge of the river and port of London,) I determined to relinquish all the golden promises that were to be realised by a continuance in a mawkish routine of business, no way suited to my love of adventure.

The frigate I was appointed to was ordered to the West Indies, where we joined



the fleet under Admiral P—— at the attack of the Havannah; but, before the place fell, we were sent off to Halifax, in Nova Scotia, when I was removed to the N——, under the command of Admiral Lord C——, whose first lieutenant was my near relation. A braver fellow or better seaman, I believe, than my relation Dugdale, never stepped between the stem and stern of a ship, nor one more generally known and beloved throughout the navy. I was ambitious, therefore, of serving under him.

We had not been long on this station, before we were ordered on an expedition, the re-taking of Newfoundland, which the French had possession of. A grand point to be obtained was the safe landing our troops: Lieutenant Dugdale had the charge and care of this duty; I attended him, and the whole was performed with such celerity and good order as soon ensured success.

My old landlady at St. John's was dead and her daughter married away.

The admiral could do no less than re-

port handsomely of my relation's conduct, in his dispatches home; but, instead of sending Dugdale with these dispatches, an honour which he was entitled to, and from which he would have received promotion, a young lieutenant was sent with them, who had no more pretension to it than myself. This and various other circumstances opened my eyes as to any thing that was to be expected without interest; yet I loved the service itself, and continued in it until the peace following, when, with many more, of longer service and greater deserts than myself, I was again cast adrift in the world.

---

## CHAPTER XV.

*Employed on a Shipwreck.*



THE relation whom I had left was at this juncture employed, by his brother-underwriters at Lloyd's, to go down to a



very rich ship, the *Bien Aimé*, lost near the buoy of the Spaniard, off the Isle of Sheppy. He wished me to accompany and aid him in recovering what could be saved of her cargo: this suited me well.

We went and examined the wreck. She had been sadly plundered by boats of all descriptions from Whitstable, Feversham, Queensborough, Sheerness, &c. and by people on shore, at the Isle of Sheppy and elsewhere, wherever the packages drifted on her breaking up.

Having been round to all these places, and advertised salvage to be paid for all that would be delivered up, I was left to manage as well as I could. I made Sheerness my head-quarters, where they were paying off and dismantling several ships of war, to be laid up in ordinary: the place was therefore all alive, and for the time it lasted I liked this undertaking well enough.

In the progress of it, I was witness to some curious scenes. The outer package of a box of jewellery being found on the beach, it was certain the articles were in

the possession of some person who had no intention to deliver them up: it was valued at three thousand pounds. Search-warrants were executed, and in every house that was searched, throughout the island, considerable quantities of articles were found, brought from the wreck; and among others, in the clergyman's house at Minster. The information against him was laid by a miller, whom he had threshed upon the shore, for disputing the possession of a packed cask, with bottles of green and yellow usquebaugh; when the parson, gaining the victory, obtained the prize with two fine black eyes in the bargain.

His and many other houses were half stowed with liquors of every description, cheeses, hams, &c. haberdashery in great abundance, and variety of broad cloths, linen-drapery, hardware of all sorts, hosiery, hats, a few common silver and metal watches, with articles of almost every kind, except the jewellery; *that* was never found.

The plunder was very great; much was



recovered but much more lost. The spirit for plunder seemed to pervade all ranks living near the shore, and all other labour ceased the day following a gale of wind. Men, women, and children, were on the shore, looking out for articles, which they deemed their own property as soon as they touched or moved them, and of course numberless quarrels and battles ensued.

A faint idea of this all-prevailing spirit may be gathered from the following little circumstance. I was riding towards the east end of the island, and, coming to a cross-way, was uncertain of my road; but, hearing some one threshing in a barn, I rode up and inquired of the man which of the roads would take me to a public-house I wanted, the sign of the "Sloop a-ground." The man stared; and, asking what I said, I repeated that I wanted to be shewn the way to the Sloop a-ground. "Ha!" said the fellow, "another ship a-ground!" and, jumping over the hatch-boards of the barn-door, ran away to the shore without another word.

This employment over, I was at a loss

which way to turn myself, when my relation again tried to persuade me to follow his business: but nothing short of active adventure could, at that time of life, satisfy me. The rebuffs which I had already received from Fortune rather increased than diminished my thirst for travel, yet it was difficult to know what course to steer.

---

## CHAPTER XVI.

*A trip up the Baltic; a present from Sir George Macartney to Lord Holland; a pleasant frolic at Holland-house.*

THE Russian service began to be talked of, as well suited for young men, who, at the close of the war, being discharged from the navy, became in a manner destitute. A short summer's trip up the Baltic soon satisfied me that service would not do. It was not mere bread that I wanted; that



I could have had at home with my relation. It was a more difficult appetite I had to satisfy, which my growing strength, spirits, and activity, induced me to think I possessed the power to gratify : the more extravagant and romantic, the greater the temptation, and I considered it a heavy misfortune that nothing of the kind offered.

Sir George Macartney was then ambassador at Petersburg: he sent home a present to Lord Holland of some large Russian sheep and a carmuncle tent. Being entrusted with the delivery, I went with the tent one day, and a few days after I likewise delivered the sheep at Holland-house.

On my first visit with the tent, I had been so pleasantly entreated to dine at the second table with the steward, butler, cook, Mrs. Housekeeper, my lady's gentlewoman, and his lordship's gentleman, &c. that I had no inclination to refuse. It was the best served table and the best attended to I had ever seen. We seemed mutually pleased with each other; they,

in their inquiries after the strange things I had seen abroad, and myself in relating what I had or had not seen, according to the bent of their questions. Nor can I, in truth, deny that some of the articles were a little embellished.

Among other questions, I was asked what a carmuncle tent was ; which, not to appear ignorant, although I had never seen one fixed, I gave some extravagant account of, in terms they could not well understand ; and, unfortunately, to a question, if it was easy to set up, I had answered, “ yes ; no difficulty at all to those who have seen them.” Now this, which was said in innocent gaiety of heart, proved a terrible breeder of lies ; for, when I went again with the sheep, the steward was very happy to see me, saying his lordship would be greatly obliged to me to put them in a way to set up this curious tent, he, Mr. Steward, having informed his lordship that I was perfectly acquainted with the nature of those tents, which I had described most magnificently to him and others the day I delivered it.



I confess that, at the first, I was no way displeased at the invitation, considering it as a pleasant adventure likely to afford me much novel amusement; and I vainly conceived it a matter of no difficulty, thinking any sailor, in spreading it out, would soon make out the clews from the earings, with all its bracings, bowlines, &c. I therefore promised to do my best to oblige his lordship.

In the course of the day, however, I understood that several tent-makers had been sent for, but declined the undertaking. I began then to think I had overshoot my reckoning; but it was too late to retreat, without retracting all the white lies I had uttered. This I could not do, and determined to bustle and fight through my difficulties as well as possible; seriously resolving to myself, that, once clear of this, I would never risk hampering myself again with the charms of such innocent-looking fibs.

On my return home, a thought occurred which I put in train the next day, by going to the Tower, where I enquired among the

old soldiers for those who had done duty on the continent, and if any had ever seen such a kind of tent. I was fortunate enough to find an old firelock, who said he had ; and, provided I could procure leave of absence for him and a comrade, he felt assured of being able to accomplish the setting it up. This I readily procured from Lieutenant-Governor R——d, whose son and I were old school-fellows. I promised my men good living while there, and, if they succeeded, to pay them well ; but they must appear to take their instructions from me.

We were three days about it, nor do I remember spending three days and nights much pleasanter. Our table, (meaning the steward, butler, &c.) was spread with every dainty that could be had, better I am persuaded than his lordship's was in general ; and, had I been disposed to remain with them three months instead of three days, I might have lived in clover all the time ; but I had just enough of high life below stairs while pitching my tent.

On the second day, his lordship had



company ; some of whom, notwithstanding the rain, ventured before dinner, with the young lord and his brother Charles, to view such part of the tent as was erected. By their questions, I soon perceived they were attempting to quiz me ; but, getting my sailor-like tacks on board, they found a tolerable match, and, Mr. Charles taking part with me, the young lordlings had salt eel for a relish.

After dinner, I had a message from his lordship to know, as the rain prevented the company from going out to see the sheep, whether I thought any of the sheep could be brought to visit them. This exactly suited my humour, and I said certainly, they were quite harmless, though so very large, provided some one they were acquainted with accompanied them. Being requested so to do, I selected a very high and large horned ram, with one of the ewes. These were obliged to be dragged and forced up the broad stair-case, to the great annoyance of the footmen's liveries, who swore pretty roundly, while they were pushing them up, to find the

pitch and tar, which the poor animals brought with them from the ship, take so strong a liking to their garments. Nor was their displeasure much lessened, when I observed that none of them knew how to swear, and that I would engage to bring a boy, who had not been more than a year at sea, that should beat them all, if they could not swear in a less clumsy and lubberly manner. This stopped their swearing a little, but not their grumbling.

Having borrowed a good strong line, I fastened it round the horns of my ram before I entered the room with them; and, taking a silk handkerchief from my pocket, put it loosely round my neck, to sailorise myself as much as possible. Thus equipped, I entered as master of the ceremonies, to introduce my two Russians. Questions out of number were asked from all parts of the table; but, keeping my eye on the compass of her ladyship's countenance, I steered a steady course by answering her questions only; except when his lordship deigned once or twice to turn half round to me, with some sager inquiry, to all



which I found no difficulty, except that of keeping a serious countenance.

Some of the company then called out, "Sailor! what say you to a glass of wine?"—"With all my heart," I answered. I believe it was done by a wag to try me, for which I was in excellent cue, being resolved from the first to maintain my character as a careless free and easy sailor. A bumper was brought me; when, taking hold freely, I gave my arm a sweep of ninety, and, looking towards my hostess and the ladies near, I gave aloud, as my toast, "The Land of Beauty, and may the Fair never want British tars to protect them." It was received with glee, and "Well done, sailor; well done, Jack," echoed all round the table, until his lordship observed it was a fair challenge, and ought to be accepted by every man there. Their glasses were filled accordingly, and mine also by her ladyship's orders, who, with a smile, said to me, "I am sure you have no objection to it a second time."—"No, my lady; a sailor never thinks he can have too much of a good thing."

I was then asked, by his lordship, if there were any other properties in the sheep besides those which had been noticed. They had not remarked the uncommon size of their tails, I observed, which were as broad and as long as the flaps of their coats, and some inches thick of a fat as rich and as good as marrow. At the same time capsizing the animal about, so as to bring his stern in full view of the company, and straddling across his back, I hauled his immense tail straight up, exhibiting the gentleman's hinder parts to advantage. A roar of laughter ensuing, I dropped the curtain; when one of my quizzing morning visitors, rising from his chair, came as he said to examine the tail more accurately; and, lifting it up again, he was prying about; when, intending to make the animal start forward from under me, I gave him a sharp pinch with my knees in the loins, which produced so unexpected an explosion as overthrew all my predetermined gravity in an instant: and I must have laughed as loud as the company, had I not, by a second pinch, made



him shoot a-head suddenly, affording me an opportunity to fall and thus claim a share of the general laughter with my officious fellow-exhibitor. The poor affrighted Russian, finding himself at liberty, scampered to the end of the room ; and, turning his head round to the attending servants, stamped with his foot so resolutely as to make them shy of approaching him, until, recovering my legs, I went to their aid and took him again in tow.

Lord Holland, concluding the company had been entertained long enough with the exhibition, thanked me very courteously, and I withdrew with my retinue of four and two footed animals, leaving the noble company convulsed with merriment, unless my volunteer aid-de-camp was an exception.

My friends at the second table were no way behind hand in enjoying the above-stairs frolic, especially when the cause of the explosion was explained to them.

On the following day, we finished setting up the carmuncle. Of its being done

completely as it ought, I had my doubts : it was an intricate piece of work, and the parts did not appear to fit quite well ; but, as no one was there to find fault or that could do it better, I came away with flying colours.

At parting, I promised what I then meant to perform, that, on my return to England, from a voyage in contemplation, I would pay such hearty messmates another visit. And, more than twelve years after, being at Sadler's Wells, I was accosted by the butler, and good-naturedly reproached for non-performance. I then wondered at his remembering me so well, and often since have had occasion to be surprised at the recollection of my person by various other people.



## CHAPTER XVII.

*Voyages in the merchant-service. A duel. Former rigid observance of the Sabbath at Boston, in America. Bathing, and running the gauntlet through the town.*



IT would be tiresome to detail a variety of common-place adventures in the course of sundry voyages I made, in merchant-ships, to different ports in America and the West Indies. Novelty tempted me to try many, but in none could I find sufficient inducement to continue.

The only mercantile-shipping employ, that I conceived I might be reconciled to, was up the Mediterranean ; but both fear and shame deterred me from making the attempt. I was fearful on account of my former enamorata, to whom, as well as to her brother, I had, agreeably to her request, written, on my return to England, a variety of insurmountable reasons on the score of family and the service I was in,

unless her friends would consent to her quitting them to reside in England, whenever our marriage might take place; which, by reason of my youth at that time, would necessarily be some years first. This was what she had desired me to write.

From the angelic girl I received an answer, containing only six words besides the initials of her name; they are deeply engraven on my heart: with a postscript, advising me never to trust myself in Italy again. This was partly explained by her brother's letter, by which I found all her friends were much enraged. I likewise felt ashamed of appearing in a mercantile situation, where I had figured away in a naval uniform.

I must here acknowledge, that, although I began these Memoirs with what I thought a firm resolution not to hesitate in relating whatever had occurred, however repugnant it might appear to truth and common sense, I have detected myself in withholding a foolish mad-headed circumstance, merely because it might sound incredible. I was grossly affronted, in a



public company at Jamaica, by a toast, most pointedly given for the purpose. I requested permission of the chairman to decline it: the author persisted in his right, after the chairman and others had drunk it, during a momentary absence of mine. The chairman and company in general, not conceiving it was of such importance as my antagonist knew it was to me, ordered me to drink it. Naturally impetuous when taken off my guard, I instantly determined, and, taking up my glass, said to the chairman, "Sir, I bow to the laws of social drinking in obeying your orders; the result must take its chance." I drank it, then *bit* off part of the bowl of my glass, chewed it with my teeth, and spit it full in the author's face across the table.

It may appear incredible, but I was actually not injured in the smallest degree, neither was my antagonist, from the glass. I begged the company's pardon and withdrew, with a hint that could not be mistaken. We met at daylight the next morning; he preferred swords, and I ran

him through. I crossed the island and lay incog. at a planter's until he recovered. On my return, he wished to see me: I went, when he sincerely requested my forgiveness and took the whole blame on himself.

This was the only duel I was ever concerned in as the challenger, and I was truly sorry for it, particularly so from the ungovernable, foolish, spiteful-like, heat I was first thrown into.

In the year 1765, I went out to Boston as second-mate of the *Mary*, Captain D—n; his son was first-mate: a strong friendship subsisted between us many years, until his death. I had often found it useful to have a pocket case of surgeons' instruments, and for some time had made it a necessary appendage, particularly so on board of merchant-ships; and by degrees I grew tolerably expert for a make-shift when no abler surgeon was at hand.

From my friend D—n I was well informed, during the passage out to Boston, of the over-zealous puritanic strictness of the place; and among other things, that



from sun-rise to sun-set on Sundays, no person was permitted to go from house to house, or walk the street, (except going to and from a place of worship,) without being liable to a fine, punishment, or exposed to public shame. For this purpose the elders or wardens, in the different divisions of the town, patrolled the streets with white wands the whole day ; if they found any person transgressing out of the hours of church-time, they proceeded summarily to inflict a penalty, which, if refused to be paid, the party was placed in the stocks ; if it was during divine service, and after the allotted time of going to church or meeting was passed, the person stopped might be excused from the penalty, by declaring it to be his intention to go to some place of worship ; on which, the elder, &c. would lead the party to the nearest church or meeting, and, entering with him, give three raps with his wand on a sounding board, to signify to the congregation that he had brought in some strolling idler : the only persons exempt from these religious aus-

terities, were ministers and medical gentlemen; it being presumed, that they were proceeding on works of necessity or mercy. In confirmation of this, my friend D—n related the following anecdote:—

“ Captain M——e of the royal navy, who was well known under the title of Mad M——e, commanded, some years before, a frigate on the Halifax station: whilst lying at anchor in Boston harbour, he was rowed to the town in his barge on a Sunday in the forenoon, to wait upon the governor; his men neatly dressed in uniform with white shirts and black caps: upon his landing, and while giving orders to an attending midshipman, Captain M——e was accosted by some of the elders, who expressed their sorrow at his having broken the sabbath: but as the law made no distinction as to persons so offending, he and his boat's crew must submit to them. The captain, desiring information as to the law, was told, that, as they transgressed during divine-service, he and his boat's crew might make their election either to be denounced as pro



phane idlers at the first place of worship, pay the pecuniary penalties, or be placed in the stocks. The elders, after attempting some awkward apologies, again observed, that the laws must be obeyed. Captain M——e, giving it a slight consideration, said, “Certainly, gentlemen, we must all submit to good discipline; I am pretty strict myself in keeping good order when on board, therefore cannot object to your shore laws; and, as you allow me a choice, I think there will not only be more of a novelty in the thing, but it will appear something like a frolic, for a captain of a king’s ship and his barge’s crew to be fixed in the stocks, to divert the good people as they return from their various places of worship; we, therefore, shall prefer the stocks.” To the stocks they accordingly went; the sailors highly enjoying the fun, of being placed in limbo with their captain, passing it off in this jocular way.

The fervor of religious discipline began, however, to cool by the next morning, when they considered that it was a king’s

officer they had been thus chastising for an offence under their municipal law, to which he was a stranger, and from his rank, and the duties of the service he was on, might not be amenable: a meeting, therefore, of the principal town's people was convened, and a deputation of the elders, &c. waited on Captain M——e at his lodgings, deeply lamenting the occurrence, and sincerely hoping he would not harbour any resentment against the town on account of its laws. M——e smiled, assuring them, that, as to himself, he considered it a genuine good frolic, and desired them to think no more about it: to convince them of his forgiveness, he gave the deputation an invitation to dine on board his frigate a few days after. This was cheerfully accepted by all; those, in particular, who were the active members in enforcing their town-laws, being most fearful of consequences to themselves, if a complaint had been made to government against this extraordinary treatment of a king's officer, while in the regular discharge of his duty. The captain's cle-



mency and amiable disposition were highly extolled ; and, on the day appointed, all that were invited went on-board, where they were received with all due respect ; and, on the ship's yards being manned to salute them, with other matters exhibiting the discipline and good order of the ship's company, the select men of Boston expressed the greatest admiration : an excellent dinner was provided with plenty of good wines, and hilarity seemed the order of the day.

After the customary loyal bumper toasts, Captain M——e gave “ the Select Men of Boston,” in a bumper ; adding, “ and may their good example, of maintaining strict order and decency, be followed by others with whom it lies to watch over and impartially enforce the laws, without respect to persons ;” or words to that effect. This compliment, together with the enlivening juice of the grape, and its merry companion, punch, raised their animal spirits so high, that they relaxed much of their puritanic rigidity ; and began to grow a little frolicsome and jocular.

A midshipman coming in to speak to the captain, he made an apology for leaving the cabin for a short time, as he was wanted on deck, desiring the lieutenant to take the chair during his absence, and not let his friends want for any thing. Captain M——e's health was bumpered on his leaving the cabin ; the ship, the officers, and the crew, followed ; the lieutenant, coming fresh from the deck, put the glass about briskly, with such exhilarating toasts and sentiments, as none could refuse ; inso-much that some of the select men conceived that the ship had a strange motion, and inquired if the weather was not getting stormy ; the lieutenant assured them, they had nothing to apprehend on that account, as it was very fine when he left the deck : one of them declared, however, that he would go *up stairs* to see, and learn what the captain was about, as he had left them so long ;—scrambling up these stairs, as he called them, he shot ahead rather too fast, when he gained the quarter-deck, and ran against an officer who was walking the deck with the cap-



tain, as steady and unconcerned as though no company was on board. A slight motion of the ship, with the sudden change of air from the cabin, made it difficult for him to stand without holding; much less could he attempt walking alone: catching hold of the captain's arm in a familiar way, he addressed him, "Why, noble captain, I swear you are as wily as the old serpent, you;—(*hiccup*)—and that crafty toad you left in your place has been—(*hiccup*)—leading us into mortal temptation; whe-ew, Lord bless me! how the ship whirls round, and what a—(*hiccup*)—rebellion in my bowels!" The captain, withdrawing his arm from cousin Jonathan, (as sailors call all New-England men,) expressed surprise and sorrow, to see any gentleman in such a state of intoxication, on the quarter-deck of a king's ship; the well-known laws against which being broken, he could make *no distinction* as to persons, and the offender must submit accordingly; then, ordering the boatswain to tie Jonathan up, and give him a civil check, (a term given by sailors to one dozen

strokes with the cat o' nine tails,) he was lowered over the ship's side into a boat, with strict orders to take good care of the gentleman. Captain M——e continued walking his quarter-deck, whilst every few minutes interval brought him another drunken visitor, in search of those who had left them in the cabin. Their hiccupping addresses to the captain, with his expressions of sorrow, and the ceremony of flogging, varied but little: they were successively lowered down by the yard tackle into two boats, growling like bears with sore backs, with sympathizing directions from the captain to the attending midshipmen, to see all the gentlemen safe to their respective homes. Before the boats put off from the ship, Captain M——e expressed his hope, that they would admit the necessity of laws being as well enforced at sea as on shore, and that they would derive as much benefit from the wholesome discipline of a king's ship, as he had from their municipal regulations.

My readers are desired to bear in mind,



that the foregoing is related merely as a tale that was told: to a certainty, I found the town of Boston as puritanically rigid as I had been taught to expect; and, conformably with my friend's advice, having upon the passage accepted the title of Doctor, I went by no other name, and as the Doctor of the Ship I was introduced and known; this gave me, (what I then considered a most valuable privilege,) the liberty of going where I pleased on the Sundays, for, I took care to have patients in various parts of the town. With the trifling complaints of my patients I could manage tolerably well, and I gained credit with my brother doctors, in declining to attend any thing serious, which might interfere with the town practitioners; still, as an *Old England Doctor*, I was frequently applied to, and in preference consulted; but I had much difficulty at times to maintain my gravity. On the whole, it afforded considerable insight and knowledge of the hypocrisy and profligacy that prevailed in *secret*, in the renowned sanctified town of Boston, beyond what I had seen at

New-York and other sea-port towns in America, where they did not pretend to so much.

I was well received by several worthy families at Boston, by some of whom I was earnestly desired to think of settling there as a medical practitioner, conceiving, I suppose, from my forbearance to practise to the injury of the residents, and being educated in the old country, that I must possess superior knowledge. I was esteemed, accordingly, a very modest young man. I kept my own counsel, resting satisfied with the credit given to me by the profession for my civil forbearance, and the good wishes of friends to settle among them. I was, however, very near losing the esteem of some of the most serious good folks, by an unlucky trick played me by some of my juvenile acquaintance, which, though it may not edify, may probably amuse the reader more than it did myself, at the time of the occurrence.

In the Bay at the back of the town, over which a bridge has since been built



to communicate with Charles-Town, there was a convenient nice spot for bathing, without offending the eye of decency, where I frequently retired to swim for recreation. A party of six, nearly of the same age, went thither one evening for that purpose; three of us were in the water, the other three declined going in, making some frivolous excuse, which we did not attend to: these young men were native inhabitants of Boston, we, the swimmers, were from the old country; a distinction at that time much in our favour, especially at dancing and other frolics among the lasses, the open hilarity and freedom of our manners forming a complete contrast to the demure countenances and attitudes of their own townsmen; this was easily and naturally accounted for, nor was it an uncommon thing for Jonathan to bring his sweet-heart to the dance, and lose her for a partner. It had so happened to these three sparks, a few evenings prior to our bathing excursion, in consequence of which, they had plotted a notable scheme of revenge. They

waited until we had swam out a considerable distance from the shore, when, bundling up our clothes, they marched off, leaving us without a single article of clothing, besides our shoes. For two hours or more, we continued alternately bathing and landing, in expectation of their returning, or sending us our apparel, after they had sufficiently diverted themselves at our watery confinement, as likewise our detention from a party we were all engaged to meet that evening. There was no possible way for us to reach our ships at Long Wharf, but by going through the streets, which on summer evenings were always crowded with young and old people, walking out to enjoy the cool air, but as prim and demure as possible; so much so, that it was jocularly observed of the young women, that, before they walked out, they were obliged to stand before a looking glass to fold their arms properly, and put their mouths in serious plaits; from out of which, they were not to be disturbed until their return; and truly, eyes excepted—they moved more like au-



tomatons than animated beings. Yet they were far enough from inanimates ; for when they could and did meet under the shade of night, or in private, from under the control of those who governed them, they were no ways sparing of their enjoyments, or, as seamen express it, they fetched their lee-way up with a wet sail.

As the evening began to close in, we grew apprehensive that our Brother Jonathans meant something more than a mere laugh, until at length we found ourselves reduced to the alternative of running the gauntlet, naked as we were, through the streets crowded with primitives ; or, by waiting until the watch was set, (strong active fellows with long poles having sharp hooks at the end,) take the chance of a running fight through the streets. Had it not been for the plaguy hooks, we should have chosen the latter ; but, not relishing the idea of being brought up sharp with an iron hook in our flesh, we determined on the first. To prepare for this, we each suited ourselves with one of the strongest short club sticks we could pick

up along the shore ; and, meeting with a patch of excellent black slimy mud, we plaistered each other well over from our foreheads downwards, until we appeared more like savage Indians, or run-a-way negroes, than Europeans. We waited to the last minute we could calculate on being safe from Brother Jonathan's hooks, and then set off on a good jog trot, in the form of a triangle. Being the best cudgel player, I took the lead, all equally resolved not to be stopped by a small force ; keeping in the middle of the streets, and brandishing our cudgels pretty nimbly to clear the way if necessary, accompanied by an imitation of the Indian war-whoop, an undisputed path was left for us to proceed, and we arrived at the Long Wharf, where our ships lay, unmolested, though not unnoticed ; being too formidable as well as too nimble in our motions, for any attempt at the first, and our black robes too remarkable not to draw attention. As to any knowledge of our persons from appearance, that was impossible ; and, on our approaching near to the further end



of this very long wharf, we threw ourselves headlong into the water, diving, swimming, and cleansing each other, until the increasing darkness enabled us to get on-board undiscovered.

We were not long rigging ourselves out anew, then, swallowing a cordial of cherry-bounce, we sallied back into the town, determined, if we could find our quondam friends, they should not go laughing to bed : as we expected, we caught them dancing full of yankee frolic, until our appearance disconcerted them a little : we were soon informed, that our run-aways had declared us to be otherwise engaged, and could not join the party that evening. Having previously agreed on our plan of proceeding in the event of meeting them, as soon as the reel was finished that they were dancing when we entered, the company being small and chiefly women, a request was made for the lasses to withdraw for a few minutes ; then, declaring our determination to thrash or be thrashed, for the indecent scurvy trick they had served us, we set-to with a

hearty good will as a battle royal, the three to three, and not singly as one to one, until they were drubbed to our hearts content, by their crying out for quarter.

I beg leave in this place to remark, that, expecting to be called to account by some fastidious readers, who may think, that, having now to sustain the character of a sedate sober magistrate in the seventieth year of my age, I ought not to publish the follies and eccentricities of my youthful days; but, (in answer) as I have never set myself up as free from follies and errors; on the contrary, having candidly acknowledged, that when young, I required much allowance for myself, therefore have freely made the same to others; and having also promised to entertain to the best in my power, by relating such adventures and anecdotes as I have met with, and that I would endeavour to instruct, by exhibiting the struggles I have endured;—I shall travel on in my own plain way, well satisfied whilst the majority are pleased to afford me their approbation; especially as, among the number of those who have favoured



me with it, I can reckon eminent divines, gentlemen and ladies of the first respectability, who were otherwise strangers. In a word, I write (respecting myself) of things that were, and not as things should be; for, whatever may have been my other failings and weaknesses, I am no hypocrite: and I trust and believe, that a genuine picture of the path through a long life, taking it rough or smooth, as it happens, is less liable to injure the morals, than any fanciful description or selected parts, to appear all sun shine without a shade.

---

## CHAPTER XVIII.

*Meet with my old shipmate; carry a challenge from him to his former commander; obliged to fly; overtaken and cooped up in Dover Castle; Captain Hope and his flying serpents.*



COMPLETELY disgusted with the mercantile shipping, no temptations or offers were sufficient to induce a continuance.

On my return home, I met with my old ship-mate B——. He had been master of a merchant-ship in the Portugal-trade, but found that would not suit.

We found ourselves nearly in similar circumstances; but his were the worst, being in debt, and having a violent quarrel with his father, (who refused advancing him money). He was involved also in so serious an altercation with his last commander, while in the navy, as to be obliged to request me to be the bearer of a serious note to him. On delivering the same, and its being read, I was asked if I knew the contents; to which an affirmative answer being given, his lordship said it was very well, it required no answer from him.

Returning to B—— at the Admiralty Coffee-house, and communicating what had passed, it was not long before we saw his lordship pass and stop at the Admiralty-Office. Guessing what his errand might be, B—— requested a brother-officer to go thither and learn what mischief was hatching. We were soon informed that a complaint was lodged against us both,



and in all probability warrants would be soon issued for our apprehension. To avoid which, we immediately took post-chaise to Dover, intending to cross the channel to France: but it unfortunately happened that poor B—— was indebted to a tradesman there, who, hearing of his arrival at the inn, and concluding, from our eager inquiries about the packet's sailing, that B—— was flying from his creditors, had him arrested and taken to Mr. J——ts at the Castle.

I accompanied my friend, and, finding the governor well disposed to make the quarters agreeable, I took up a voluntary abode at the Castle with him. Being no way sparing in our expenses, we passed away a few days and nights as pleasantly as heart could wish, and my only regret was the loss of my friend's liberty. The governor was one of the most extraordinary characters I ever met with. His morality, which was extravagantly eccentric, he would justify by texts from Scripture, with a volubility of argument that might have puzzled better casuists than we could

pretend to be ; and we must have possessed a wonderful self-denial to attempt it. He had a large and beautiful family : the daughters were lively and frolicsome as May, and such noble disputants that contention with them was in vain ; we submitted, of course.

On the third day, when things were in train for settling the arrest, we were rather more vexed than surprised at being apprehended by some gentlemen who had taken the trouble of tracing and following us from London. Knowing it was useless then to settle the other arrest, I accompanied the gentlemen back to town the following day, when I soon got bailed. The governor brought my friend up and lodged him safely in the Fleet, where, purchasing a knowledge of the Rules, he lived unmolested for some months, his father still refusing to assist him. The fracas with his lordship was made up by his making the *amende honorable*, which likewise released me.

Among the many facetious pleasant men I have been acquainted with, was



Captain Hope, master of a ship in the Mediterranean trade. The following little anecdote, as shewing how readily the imagination may be led into error, must be my apology for introducing it here. He lived at Rotherhithe. My old ship-mate, Captain D—n, who had obtained command of a ship, and myself, were accompanying him from the city to dine with him. A hasty shower of rain drove us into a public house for shelter, where we were confined for twenty minutes or more. Hope's tongue was seldom idle; he had already drawn the attention of others, who had likewise taken shelter in the same public tap-room: on noticing this, he very gravely addressed me to know if I had seen the flying serpents he had brought home from Asia. I knew nothing of his design, but, from my knowledge of the man, concluding it was merely a preamble to some story he wished to relate, I said no, I had not. "Well," said Hope, "it is rather extraordinary you should not, considering the many to whom I have shewn them; here is D—n has seen the serpents

frequently, and when I choose to turn them loose to fly about this or any other room, (first taking care to shut the doors and windows to guard against their flying out of the hearing of my whistle) he knows how easily I can charm them back to me." By this time every eye and ear in the room were attentively fixed on the narrator. He went on, therefore, saying, "remember me after dinner, and you shall see how adroitly they fly about in all directions after insects. Nay, for that matter, as we are likely to be confined some time by this shower, I could amuse you here, as I perceive there are plenty of flies in the room, for I took two or three in a box this day to shew to some ladies, and have them now in my pocket." Having said this, loud enough for all to hear him, he took a box from his coat pocket, and placed it on the table before us: it looked like a wafer box with holes in the top, seemingly to give air within. Some tobacco-pipes lying within his reach, he took two of them, and, opening the lid of the box, he whistled and turned some live



vipers, sure enough, out upon the table. Neither D—n or myself kept our seats any longer; and, one of the vipers being touched with the tobacco-pipe, it reared its crest and made a slight hissing, when away shot every soul out of the room but ourselves, and even D—n and I kept at a very respectful distance.

This was the point he aimed at; for, pretending great surprize at their fears, he called to assure them the serpents were perfectly under his control, and, as they appeared so much afraid of their flying, he would order them up again immediately, which he did very expeditiously, first taking care to whistle; then, lifting them with the tobacco-pipes, he replaced them and shut the box, begging pardon with great gravity of countenance, on the good people returning into the room: observing they need not to have been so much alarmed, as he had them completely under command; which was true enough, for the poor things were nearly dead.

We soon left the house, the people staring at Hope, as an extraordinary kind of

man. Hope laughed at our being so shy of his pocket companions, and our declining to sit in company with them; he then explained the whole, by informing us, that, his father being advised to take viper broth, he had bought those in the box for his father, and on this little circumstance he had indulged his vein of humour, to try how far he could work on the credulous.

---

## CHAPTER XIX.

*A visit to the Savages in North America.*

WHILE B—— was thus busily but quietly engaged in arranging matters with all his friends, I recollected a half promise I had made nearly twelve months before, when in America, to meet some Indian chiefs, who came annually to receive presents from government; and with whom I had ingratiated myself so much, by fre-



quent familiar conversations about their country and mode of living, as to receive most pressing invitations to accompany them back, which I felt much inclined to accept. I therefore gave a kind of promise to meet them that time twelve month, if possible, but that I must cross the Great Belt first.

Remembering this in time, and nothing more suitable to my roving disposition being in view, I made what little preparations I thought necessary, and returned agreeably to the appointment; and, when my Indian sachems understood I had recrossed the Great Belt of Waters purposely to meet them, they appeared terrifically wild in their savage gesticulations of satisfaction. By the interpreter, I soon learned a few common general words and wrote down many more to take with me. I only agreed for liberty to return when I liked, to which they seriously pledged themselves.

Learning pretty nearly what I had to encounter, I equipped accordingly; the spirit of enterprise reconciling me to every

difficulty and danger I might have to engage with. It will be unnecessary to furnish a detail of uninteresting matter, relative to a tedious fatiguing journey, in which, however strong and active I had flattered myself with being, I found the Indians much superior. However, they had patience to bear with me, and I perseverance to continue it ; until habit gave that tone to my nerves which enabled me at length to endure and accomplish what otherwise I never should have been equal to.

Of this Indian frolic, (for it can be considered in no other light,) I have nothing wonderful to relate. On joining their tribes (the Oneidas and Tuscaroras,) I was received with an openness that insured the fullest protection and friendship, and I was given to understand that the confidence I had reposed in them should not be forfeited.

The short time I remained with them, was chiefly occupied in endeavouring to understand the ideas and manners of men in the crude savage state of nature. I ac-



accompanied them in their hunting parties, through the wilderness and woods, and in their fishing parties on Lake Ontario. Once I saw the Falls of Niagara; but, straitened in point of time and expecting to visit them again, I did not gratify the whole of my curiosity.

I began to be tolerably expert and to receive praise for my exertions, so that in time I might have made a tolerable good Indian. In running and climbing, the young Indians beat me hollow; but in wrestling I was an over-match for most. In throwing, I had no kind of chance with them, but with single stick I surprized them all with the management and exercise.

A few trinkets I took with me gained the hearts of several young squaws; but, whatever may be said about the indifference of savages in their love to women, I found the jealousy of two young Indians, in respect to the squaws they were courting, was not to be jested with. One of the lasses warned me to take care of the Indian who followed her, or he would do

me mischief; and I was repeatedly asked by those I had first accompanied whether I designed settling with them, in which case, every thing would be done to make me happy; but, if that was not my intention, they recommended me to leave them soon and with secrecy, as some of the young Indians began to threaten me, which nothing but my determining publicly to fix and marry among them could pacify; and, though they should be sorry for my leaving them, they had better consent to that than have a greater sorrow to lament.

Having been nearly four months among them, my curiosity was completely satisfied, and I was rather glad of an excuse for quitting them; but I could not agree to go away secretly, observing that I came openly and without fear, and so I would return; that, if any owed me ill will, they must declare the cause; and, if I did not clear myself to the satisfaction of the elders, I would abide their decision or meet my enemy openly: but that I could not steal away as if afraid.

It was at last settled that I should



publicly declare my intentions of returning, and request guides. This was done, and two of my old friends said they would see me safe to Albany. Our route was laid down, and we set off on an afternoon to travel a short distance, where we were to sleep the first night.

On the morning after we set off, turning out of the wigwam which I had slept in, I was surprised to see the young squaw who had formerly cautioned me. She came to inform me that the two Indians had a design to way-lay me at some distance and revenge themselves upon me, when my guides would not suspect danger. She had watched and secretly overheard them; and, after seeing them set off early in the night, had followed us to acquaint me of the danger. My friends promised to keep her secret, or she would be murdered, and, taking a different route, we neither saw nor heard any more of them.

It may be asked, what was my aim in this wild undertaking? Simply a romantic curiosity, and to gratify a strong desire I had to see and examine human nature in

every possible shape, from the savage to the highest state of civilised society. I had heard that the completest state of independence and consequent rational happiness was with the savage: and that those, who, from necessity or choice, had lived a sufficient time with them to obtain an active hardihood and strength to bear their fatigues, would experience so high a relish and enjoyment of perfect independence as never more to wish to submit to the slavery of civilized life. To this it may possibly be objected, that I did not stay a sufficient time to warrant my deciding contrary to the generally conceived opinion. I can only say, I continued long enough to satisfy myself that this boasted independent state of nature has infinitely fewer rational enjoyments, with greater difficulties and hardships from incertitude and laborious exertions, attended with frequent alarms and danger. Their enjoyments are very little, if at all, superior to those of the wild animals they hunt, and their troubles I conceive to be much greater. Let those, who think otherwise,



take a longer spell at living with these copper-coloured heroes, of Nature's pure unadulterated rearing and educating.

While I was with them, I was well reconciled to their modes and manners by the novelty, and by my desire to seek that knowledge which was not to be obtained so well any other way. I believe few would be better received or attended to than I was ; yet, at no one moment, during my abode with them, did I wish to make the exchange of civilised for savage independence.

This was my opinion at that time, 1766, in the pride of my youth, with powers of exertion equal to most, and long before the change of American independence took place, when the Aborigines, or native Indians, lived more comfortably than they as well as the Anglo-Americans do now ; and it will be seen in its place, when I again visited the American Indians as well as the English Americans, after an absence of more than thirty years, by which I was able to draw the better comparison between the former and present

situation of both, that the former have exchanged the intrepid spirit of independence which they then possessed, and which was their solitary claim to admiration, (shewn by their aspiring elevated tread, rising almost on tip-toe, with their heads as erect as possible,) for an appearance nearly the reverse.

Of the tribes that I formerly saw, many are extinct: the few that remain are comparatively abject wretches; their haughty crests are fallen, they have become dependant for the sake of spirituous liquors, which quickly enervate and destroy them, nor have they a single comfortable trait of civilization in exchange. I am convinced that those Indians, now remaining on the Atlantic side of the Allegany Mountains, are considerably more ignorant than they were, except, indeed, they have been taught some additional vices.

Farther remarks on the general character of the Indians, I shall leave to the account of my last journey to the back-country; and shall only observe, that the Anglo-Americans appear to have ex-



changed real sweets with nominal bitters, for real bitters with nominal sweets, which I may possibly explain more hereafter.

---

## CHAPTER XX.

*Peaceable times ; disbanded sea-officers at a loss what to do ; my relation volunteers with Count Orlov ; accept a military appointment for India, commence soldier ; the King of Denmark at the Tower ; a crowded theatre.*



HAVING thus far satisfied my savage cravings, I re-crossed the Atlantic and was at home time enough to rejoice with my friend on his release from so long a durance.

I now made a long stay on shore: the general theme, at that time, was General Paoli and the brave Corsicans; when I was very near embarking with my relation, Lieutenant Dugdale, to tender our services to that celebrated chief; and, but

for my hesitating on account of former connections in Italy, as a point of honour, lest any thing should arise to disturb the peace of a family I much loved, we should certainly have gone thither.

B——, likewise, though so richly allied, was nearly as distressed and destitute of employ as ourselves. He would not comply with what his father and friends wished him to do, and they refused to supply his extravagancies. A length of discreditable confinement, they thought, might break his spirit to their views; but it produced the contrary effect. He considered them more as enemies than friends, declaring he did not consider it any obligation to receive part of what they could not hinder him from at their deaths, and until then he would not be confined to their domestic arrangements; but, while he had youth and health, he would indulge that roving disposition his father had first encouraged by sending him to sea.

He regretted he had not been with me to visit the Indian tribes, and talked of going thither and remaining until quite ac-



complished as a *beau-savage*; then to return home and pay his relations a visit in character. I verily believe that no other earthly pursuit would have delighted him so much, when once undertaken, but his heart failed to engage in it by himself. He offered, and would have bound himself by the strongest obligations he could execute, to make over to me one moiety of the property he might hereafter inherit, if I would accompany him; but of this I had had enough, and was too independent in spirit to accept the offer, had I chosen to go.

As a trio of plotting adventurers, we frequently met to communicate and consult together. Poor Lieutenant Dugdale at last declared that he was so reduced, go he must, or the bailiffs would get hold of him. The Russian fleet under Count Orlov arriving in the Downs, he went down and offered his services as a volunteer; and, in all probability, I should have accompanied him, if an appointment in the military service of the East-India Company had not, at the same time, been offered to me, in 1768.

There was something very fascinating and pleasing to me in an adventure to the East Indies, yet at first I could not well brook the thought of exchanging a blue for a scarlet uniform ; but, when I did reconcile myself to it, I set about effecting the change in good earnest, by engaging a sergeant of the guards, on duty in the Tower, to drill me complete enough to fall in the ranks on the parade. I attended him and a fogle-man regularly every morning, in the Tower, as soon as the gates opened. The governor's son was then abroad as page to the Duke of York ; but any thing in reason that I asked of his father was granted. When the sergeant, therefore, assured me I was sufficiently perfect, I obtained permission to prove it to my own satisfaction, by equipping myself in one of the grenadier's regimentals and repeatedly exercising with the company. What made me the more zealous in this, was the being informed that orders were going out, to all the Presidencies in India, to train and discipline their troops according to the then new Prussian exercise, in lieu of the te-



dious heavy mode called Bland's exercise. By these means, I satisfied myself that I could handle the musket as adroitly as most; nor was I negligent in endeavouring to obtain other useful military acquirements.

While I was thus drilling in the Tower, the King of Denmark, attended by the Marquis of Granby, came early one morning to see the Tower; when, from the very few who knew of the circumstance and the few who could gain admission, I had the honour of mixing with the small train that attended him, and accompanied him through the whole range with as much ease and familiarity as if he had been an old acquaintance. And, to say the truth, unless I had known him to be a king, I should have considered him a very poor-looking little mortal. A merry-hearted widow lady, who accompanied me, observed that he might do very well as a king, but she should not like him for a husband.

He appeared very affable and pleasant to all around him; and, the marquis being very attentive to two fine young women,

daughters of Major C——, in the Tower, who had hid themselves in the armoury, but were discovered and led forth by the marquis, whose attention from that time was wholly occupied with them, the king turned pleasantly familiar to any other person near him to ask questions. Whether it was customary with him to speak Italian, in preference to any other language, I know not; but that morning he made all his inquiries in the Italian language, which frequently enabled me, from the knowledge I retained of it and my acquaintance with many things in the Tower, to answer him. This he noticed, by addressing himself at times to me with a gentleman-like ease, the most engaging and fascinating possible from those of exalted rank to humble individuals like myself.

As I observed before, this was a very easy introduction to see his majesty; a few days after it was just the reverse. Mr. Garrick opened Drury-Lane theatre for three nights, in order to gratify the King of Denmark with a display of his unparalleled theatrical abilities.



Having myself seen Garrick in all his various characters, it was no temptation to encounter the violence of a mob; and, after the ramble through the Tower, I considered his majesty with the indifference of a common acquaintance. Yet it so happened, that, without the smallest premeditated intention, I was tempted to the struggle. Dining at a coffee-house in the Strand, on the first day of the theatre opening, I heard no other discourse or remark from those that entered, for an hour and a half that I was there, but exclamations of the immense crowd of people in Catherine-Street, and all the avenues to the theatre, where numbers had been in waiting for several hours.

This induced me, from mere curiosity, to take a view when I left the coffee-house, but still without any intention of attempting to get in; and, when I had taken my view of the mob, it was evident that not one third of them could be admitted. Being well acquainted with every avenue, I worked through the alleys to a court, where there was an entrance to the pit

down a flight of steps and a long dark passage. A steam poured forth from the head of this entrance, equal to that of a boiling copper; the effluvia of which, together with the screams of many that were in but could not get out again, I imagine had deterred people from crowding on the outside.

Drawing nearer the entrance, a captain of a merchant ship and his wife seeing me, the good lady exclaimed, "Oh! what are you come? well, if any one here gets in, I am sure you will!" and her husband repeated it. This induced most that were in sight to turn their heads, I suppose to see what strange being it was, reputed to possess such power. Not until that moment had I a thought or wish to get in; but, as the going away might have looked something like cowardice, and it appearing a kind of adventure to achieve what the lady so firmly asserted, I determined instantly to benefit all I could from the impression made by her declaration.

It wanted a short quarter of an hour of the doors' opening. The passage had been



so lately painted as to wipe off on the clothes of all who touched the walls ; and, as most of the good people were dressed in their best, in compliment to his Danish majesty, all down the flight and some way along the passage the men had turned their faces to the wall, pushing themselves off by their hands and knees to save their new coats.

Having nothing on that I cared for, and wearing the fashionable scratch wig of that day, I told the lady aloud, I should try at it ; then, taking the wig off my head, I put it into one pocket, and my stock from my neck into another, with my shirt-collar open. Thus prepared, and regardless of the paint, I took the wall, saying to each man I came to ; “ Come, ship-mate, as you have more room than you occupy, just ease off the weather-braces of your yard-arms a little and I’ll pass.” Whether it was their natural courtesy, or any opinion that they entertained in my favour from the lady’s report, aided by my rough figure, I cannot exactly say ; but I certainly experienced a very ready acquiescence, with

as much politeness as the nature of the situation would admit.

By this mode, I advanced myself along the passage, until I arrived where the pressure was too great for arms and knees to resist. This was far enough to insure my getting in, provided I could get into the current of the stream when the doors opened. To accomplish this, I edged in a little with my shoulder between two; and, stretching my right arm out, got hold of the shoulder of a stout man: at the same time making a purchase with my left foot against the wall, I gave a loud halloo, calling out, "my arm, my arm," as if in danger of breaking it, and, at the momentary shrink by those near me, I made so good a use of my double purchase as to squeeze in sufficiently from the wall.

I was surprised how those that had been there for hours could maintain it. I was not there above three or four minutes before the doors opened, and I was soon in the pit; but with a pressure that made every bone ache, and a perspiration so strong as to make me strip off coat and



waistcoat as soon as possible, after getting to a seat near the centre of the upper rows, where, two or three acquaintances joining me, we procured both brandy and porter from the orange-girls in the boxes, and fixed ourselves pretty comfortably. A scene then took place, such as I never witnessed before or since, although I have often been to very crowded houses. At both the doors, after the pit was full, those next behind, rather than be defeated of the purpose they came for, and for which they had already endured so much, climbed over the heads or crawled under the legs of those nearest the doors, until thirty or forty people nearest to each door were riding on the shoulders of others below. The pit-doors being at last shut, they durst not open them again, and for nearly an hour there was a strong contest, between the riders and the ridees, who could hold out longest.

Mr. Garrick's brother came forward on the stage with two ladders and assistants, to drag those up that fainted or were compelled to give up the struggle. Others

were taken out by hauling them up into the boxes: among these, were two rosy-coloured nice Scotch girls, who were for a long time sadly exposed; their caps and neck handkerchiefs were gone, and their clothes half torn off, tossing and rolling about with the other riders like the swell of a sea after a hard gale; while the exclamations they made, in their broad accent, encouraged an unmanly laugh from too many.

It was not in the power of any at a distance to afford the smallest assistance; but, as soon as I saw the poor girls hauled up into the side boxes, I engaged an orange-girl in the front boxes, who knew me, to go round and bring the lasses to some friends that would make room for them. This was done, for they were girls of true British spirit, and thankful enough for meeting friends although in strangers. By nestling and pushing a little, in addition to tolerable good room we had taken at first, we squeezed a lass on each bench pretty well. Among us, we managed to set up their running rigging a little, with



a silk handkerchief round each of their heads, and the best substitute we could suggest for their neck handkerchiefs. Nor did I quit them until the play was over, when I saw them safe home.

The pit must have exhibited a grotesque appearance to those who came early to their boxes; the men being all stripped to their shirts, most of which were as wet as if they had been dipped in water. Neither was their appearance much improved when clothed, as few had escaped without patches of paint, causing a motley mixture of countenances as well as garments. Those, who had put their holiday-clothes on, looked very doleful; while others, to whom it was a matter of no great consequence, were full of laugh and fun at the appearance of their neighbours, who, with a melancholy cast of countenance, were viewing the havoc in their best clothes. This afforded more entertainment, to such careless spectators as myself, than either his Majesty of Denmark or Mr. Garrick.

## CHAPTER XXI.

*Embark for India ; imaginary fears ; my old ship-mate B—— follows my relation Dugdale in the Russian service ; passage to the Cape of Good Hope.*



I had been lying at Portsmouth for more than a month, outward bound for the East Indies, without receiving answers to the many letters I had written, which caused much anxiety ; I therefore resolved, with two other young men, my fellow passengers, that were nearly in the like predicament, on making a flying trip to London and ascertain the cause, notwithstanding the ship then only waited the purser's arrival with the dispatches. Taking a post chaise and four, we got to London after midnight, slept two or three hours at the Hummums ; separated in the morning to see our respective friends, appointing to meet at the Cecil-street coffee-house in the evening.



Fearful that my sudden appearance at so early an hour as seven, might alarm my brother's family, I entered a coffee-house in the neighbourhood, ordered some coffee in a private room, and directed the waiter whither to send a message, that a gentleman from the country wanted to see Mr. H—— immediately, on special business. While waiting, I took my travelling pistols from my pockets and knocked out the priming to guard against accidents; half an hour passed, no brother, no coffee; I rang the bell, heard people running about, but no one came; I rang again, and, looking towards the door, espied at a narrow window over it a man's face, which was hastily snatched away, the moment he saw me looking towards him; I rang again, the master made his appearance, with the waiter behind him: "where is my coffee?" quite forgot; "have you sent for Mr. H——?" "Yes."—"Is he coming?"—"Yes," says the waiter.—"No," says the master. "Why, what the d——l is the meaning of all this?" and, getting up in a hurry, a little ruffled in temper, taking at the same time my

pistols from off the table, the master sprang back, overset the waiter, tumbled over him neck and heels, and both scrambled out on all fours, as fast as they could. I was vexed, yet had some difficulty to refrain laughing at their groundless fears of my innocent pistols. Sallying out, sailor-like, I c——d their cowardly souls, concluding they had never sent to my brother: I soon hove in sight of the house, and as soon saw my brother with one of the servants at the window, but both withdrawn, when I was seen; I heard the door fastened, and, being sadly provoked, I should probably have proceeded to some violence, had not my sister hurried along half dressed, calling out, “my dear brother, don’t kill him.”—“Are ye all mad?” I said, “or do you want to make me so?” However, I was obliged to promise I would not hurt him, before she would open the door. I then learned, that, just after the waiter had been with my first message, the master of the coffee-house, coming down stairs, peeped through the little window over the door, when I was unpriming



my pistols ; he fancied I was loading them, and, of course, must mean mischief to the person I had sent for ; accordingly he hastened away to my brother, to acquaint him with the danger he was in, from a desperate fierce-looking fellow, who he supposed intended to murder him.

Rising from a comfortable bed so early in the morning, my brother's fears were awake before his courage, and imagination took so strong a hold, that it was difficult to persuade him to meet me ; and for no other reason, than that he had not written answers to my letters ; the cause of which I then understood was, that our father had had a paralytic stroke, which they all deemed it most prudent to keep from my knowledge at that time.

A short period brought us once more on an even keel ; we made the briskest use we could of a few hours, and, at the time appointed, we found my ship-mates already at the Cecil-street coffee-house, with their friends ; a chaise and four had been ordered to the door, where it was kept waiting for more than two hours, before our re-

spective friends would suffer a separation, that in all probability would be final to most, and as, in fact, it proved to my two companions, Anderson and Collins, who have long since been numbered with the dead.

We had taken such copious draughts, that we slept soundly from stage to stage, until about four in the morning, when, within fifteen miles of Portsmouth, our chaise was stopped suddenly by three horsemen. It was moonlight; the first thing I heard, was Anderson's voice, and instantly saw him presenting his pistol against the man at his window, calling out in broad Scotch, "dom your bleed, an ye do na gang yur gait I'll blaw your brains out:" there was no time for parleying, or asking what was the matter; so, dropping the front glass, and aiming my pistol towards the man who had stopped the head horses, I declared loudly that, if he did not move off quickly, he should have the contents of that, and a blunderbuss into the bargain. The fellows were sorely frightened, and roared out, "for God's



sake, gentlemen, don't be in a hurry, there's no harm meant, gentlemen; we only staid the chaise to enquire for some ladies we expected," backing their horses away at the time. What they really meant, we never knew, but it was curious enough, our being so extremely resolute not to be robbed, when in reality there were not two guineas among all the three. When we alighted at Portsmouth, where the purser had arrived over night with the dispatches, all hands were busy in getting on board, and in a few hours the ship was under weigh.

My friend B—— would fain have accompanied me to India, if he could have procured a similar appointment. His relations might easily have obtained it, but they seemed determined to thwart each other. Not having his wish complied with, he was determined they should not have their way with him: and, having seen me safe on board the ship I took my passage in, when lying at Gravesend, he proceeded on; and a letter I received from him afterwards informed me he had entered as a volun-

teer in the Russian service, with my relation Dugdale.

I soon found that we had an extraordinary assemblage of characters on board ; upwards of forty young passengers, myself nearly, if not quite, the oldest of them all, going out in the civil or military service of the Company. As many were dissolute and quarrelsome, duels, real or sham, frequently occurred ; but there were others of equal worth, which they have since proved by advancing to the highest stations in their respective lines of service, civil or military ; and one,\* most deservedly, to the very high honours his sovereign has thought proper to bestow upon him.

I was more at home on board a ship than they could be. The captain and chief officers treated me accordingly with respect ; and, considering myself as launching into an entire new world, I assumed a steadiness of carriage and conduct I had never aimed at before, but which I saw

\* Lord Teignmouth.



was now necessary, and soon found beneficial. It not only kept me free from any of their idle disputes, but, by the frequency of their applications to my experience for advice, they actually yielded a deference, which, had I claimed as their senior in point of age and the service I had seen, would in all probability have made the passage as uncomfortable to me as it proved the reverse. From the various anecdotes that at times I related, they reckoned me as old again as I was, and with good-natured familiarity frequently told me so.

We had a number of raw recruits on board, whom I told the captain, with his permission, I would undertake to teach the new exercise. This he was much pleased with, and I took the command accordingly. Nor was it a small matter of surprize to him and the officers of the ship, when they saw me knock the musket about so smartly, in order to teach them their motions ; and they swore they never thought before that a sailor and

soldier could be worked out of the same stuff.

I likewise taught some few of the cadets, at their own request; but they were all more disposed to learn and play at single stick and with foils; with all which my time was pleasantly filled up.

---

## CHAPTER XXII.

*At the Cape, unpleasant situation on the Table-Mount; comfortable and cheap living.*

ON our passage out, stopping some time at the Cape of Good Hope, five of us undertook to climb up the Table-Mount; but so late were we in setting off, that, when a little better than half up, our guide, looking at the clouds which began to roll down from the top of the mount, declared he would not attempt going far-



ther ; assigning, as reasons, that we should be so enveloped in a thick mist, as to make it dangerous and difficult either to go on or return, and that, if we succeeded in getting up safe, we should not derive any benefit, as our view would be confined to a few yards around us.

A Highlander and myself were obstinate enough to go on ; our three companions thought it more prudent to return with the guide, and we were left to find our own way up. As we proceeded, we found the ascent much more difficult and dangerous, nor could we discover any kind of path-way to satisfy us we were right. In less than an hour after we parted company, we found ourselves in a complete pickle from the wet, and the mist so thick as to bid us defiance in any attempt to get higher up the most difficult part of the mount. We could only acknowledge our extreme folly in fancying ourselves wiser than the guide, and, after a short respite, we began to descend ; but, from the foggy mist making it very slippery, we found it more tedious and dangerous to get down

than the climbing up had been. Our sight did not extend three yards any way ; and, having passed several horrid precipices as we ascended, we stepped very cautiously, being frequently obliged to descend backwards, laying hold of scrub-bushes, &c.

Proceeding thus a considerable time, we came to a kind of wood, or wilderness, by which it was certain we had lost our way ; and it was equally certain we should not find it again before night, and doubtful whether we ought to attempt it. In setting out on this untoward expedition, every one had taken his couteau-de-chasse, not merely as a gentleman's appendage, but as a measure of precaution, understanding there were wild animals and wolves in particular on these mountains. Those that had pocket-pistols took them also, which was my case.

Consulting what was best, we thought the trees were friends it would be wrong to part from while so completely enwrapped in the clouds. Making choice of a spot under two trees, that were close enough



together for the branches to entwine, we soon gathered brush-wood enough for a good fire, if we could but light it. With some brown paper I soon made a tinder, or touch-paper, by rubbing it with gunpowder. I would fain have preserved my pistols loaded, and strove therefore to strike a light by our knives and couteau-de-chasse; but, that being in vain, I drew the charge of one of them. We made plenty of touch paper; and, gathering some moss, I fired the paper by the priming; then putting it in the middle of some of the driest moss we had, I held the ball between the palms of my hands; and, blowing it well, we had the satisfaction to light a fire, which we had no difficulty to keep up afterwards, and it proved the only thing we had to comfort us until daylight.

In the early part of the night, we heard the noise of some animals, but did not discover of what description. One main point was to keep up a good fire, the next how we could get a little slumbering rest. One of the trees suited tolerably well for

a person to fix himself in the crown, amidst the branches, without much danger of falling; this was therefore determined upon for the bed of repose: the other would only do for a seat on any of the branches. We agreed to watch in turn for two hours to keep the fire up: the watch was to walk or mount the tree as a sentry, as he liked best; and, at relieving watch, we went together, with fire-brands in our hands, to gather more fire-wood.

The night thus passed away without any other troubles. The clouds that enveloped us were blown away before daylight, when, a view of the ships at anchor in Table Bay serving to direct our course, we recovered our path and made the best of our way down to our lodgings, where some hot wine with a toast and a few hours comfortable rest enabled us to meet the banterings of our companions, which we richly deserved.

At Cape-Town we lived most luxuriously each for one dollar a-day. The first inhabitants of the place solicited us to




board and lodge with them at that price. The table was spread with great variety of fish, flesh, and fowl; a bottle of wine set to every plate; and, if more was wanted after dinner, it was brought. We had likewise a desert of excellent fruit at breakfast, dinner, and supper. Of course, we laid in an excellent stock of every thing we wanted for the remainder of our passage.

---

## CHAPTER XXIII.

*Arrival at Madras; with General Smith at the close of the war with Hyder Ally; Colonel Campbel's gallant offer to attack Hyder at the Mount: bashfulness of the governor, &c.; satirical sketch of the same.*



WE arrived at Madras just in time to assist at the close of the war with Hyder Ally. It would be highly presumptuous in me, therefore, to give any détail of that war, or the pusillanimous peace that Hy-

der frightened the governor and council into, when, by forced marches, he arrived at St. Thomas's Mount, about nine miles from Madras, flying from our victorious army, commanded by General Joseph Smith, from whom he could not have escaped, had they not been panic-struck on Hyder's sending a message, threatening, that, unless they immediately sent off Hircars with positive orders for General Smith to halt his army, wherever they might meet him, he would storm their fort and put them all to the sword.

A more absurd threat, I believe, was never made; but it produced a strong effect. In vain did the brave old Colonel Campbel, then waiting to take his passage home, tell them they had nothing to apprehend; that, with so strong a fort, if they had but a few old invalids, assisted by the inhabitants, they might set Hyder at defiance with his army, harassed, dispirited, and without artillery. Moreover, he volunteered his service to attack Hyder's army that night, if they would allow him to take the force which then was in



the Black Town, with the Europeans who could be spared from the garrison : pointing out to them, what his experience and knowledge of the enemy warranted, that, after so forced a march for several days, they must be worn out with fatigue : and, conceiving themselves in perfect safety from any attack, would be found so remiss in vigilance, that, at the head of the troops he could muster, he had no doubt of completely surprising Hyder at midnight and discomfiting the whole of his army. Or, admitting that he should be defeated, they still had nothing more serious to apprehend, as General Smith was advancing rapidly after him.

But it was all in vain ; if they had no personal fears, they were afraid of their garden-houses being destroyed, and Hyder obtained more than he could possibly have reason to expect.

When this was known in the army, considerable murmurs arose : their fatigues had been great, and the fall of Hyder was considered - nearly as certain ; and with him, at that time, the Mysore country would have immediately surrendered.

One young officer sketched a drawing on the occasion ; it was handed about in the army at the time, and then destroyed to prevent his getting into trouble. As nearly as I can recollect, it was thus. The governor and council are seen without the walls of the fort, from a summons of Hyder to meet him. The senior in council is leading the governor along by a string through his nose and those of his brethren, the council: the leader himself, having a remarkably large carbuncle nose, is drawn accordingly. Hyder's first salutation is seizing hold of this precious jewel, and with his drawn scymetar he threatens to cut it off, unless Hircars are instantly despatched to stop General Smith and his army. These figures were in the fore ground, and, in the back, General Smith, with his arms folded, and his men, with grounded arms, are seen looking down with contempt on Hyder and his new friends. At the time and place, the satire was well understood, and there may be some who yet remember it.



## CHAPTER XXIV.

*General Smith, his affability, &c.; Major Fitzgerald, manual wit.*

THE army was soon separated and ordered into various districts; my destiny was in the Northern Circars. Having permission, I stopped a few weeks at Madras; and, from frequent invitations to the general's house at Vippery, an estimate of his worth and his character as a private gentleman made it impossible not to love him as a man and venerate him as a commander. One instance of his affability to strangers and young officers, that they might feel equally easy at his table, may be sufficient to shew the man.

The second time I went to Vippery, a Major Fitzgerald, one of the general's staff, sat at his right hand at dinner. This gentleman was lively, cheerful, and very fond of manual wit, for which he was

well calculated in point of strength, being above six feet high, square, and well proportioned in his limbs. One species of this wit, which he usually exercised during dinner, was to have round pellets made up of new bread, by his Dubash servant, at the back of his chair; which he fillipped across the table, with considerable force, to those who were within his line of fire: most of whom returned his compliment in the same way.

Some of his pellets occasionally struck me; and, as I took no notice of them, he observed, with a jesting oath, that I treated his efforts with contempt, but he would try to sting me to resentment. The general, conceiving that I might, as a stranger, feel in an awkward situation, called me familiarly by my surname, and asked why I so patiently submitted. I answered, that one very strong reason for my not doing as others did, in this instance, was, that I did not like to waste an article I had known so much the want of. "Well, well," the general replied, "that is one good rap for the major; but remember,



when in Rome we must do as they do in Rome, bad as the custom is. If he, therefore, attacks you again, and you do not like to waste bread, throw any thing else at him that is on the table." I assured him he should find me ready enough to obey his orders ; and the major, receiving a fresh handful of pellets from his Dubash, began again, pointing most of his artillery at me.

Looking about, I made up my mind what to do when any struck me. That soon happened, when, seizing the shoulder of a kid, that lay in a dish close by, I threw it with good aim, plump against his breast, before he was well aware of any thing coming. Gathering it from his lap, where it had dropped, " Now," says he, " take care, my boy ;" and it came back with all the force he could send it. I was aware of it, and inclined sufficiently to the left to let it pass me, when it knocked down one of the Dubash servants behind. After a hearty laugh, the general challenged me to a glass of wine ; and, in accepting it, I drank the major's health,

assuring him he might depend in future on having meat in exchange for his bread. All this passed in the pleasantest manner possible, with the major particularly, who warned me to be on my guard, for it would not be long before he gave me sauce for my kid. Nor was it many days before he nearly broke my neck by suddenly unhorsing me from a very spirited horse, which the general used to lend me to accompany them in hunting.

In riding, he had every advantage over me, but on foot I was more than a match for him, provided I kept him from a close grapple. The more he was foiled the more he attempted, but generally had the laugh against him. I was always sure of the general's encouragement to oppose the major, and the more so as there were few, besides myself, who chose to encounter his rough manual wit, by a similar return.

All who knew General Smith in India will remember, that, though a strict officer on duty, he was the pleasant private gentleman when off.



## CHAPTER XXV.

*The army new disciplined; Major Fitzgerald's friendly present; my Gentoo servant, his sufferings.*

ON the army retiring to various districts, it was ordered to learn and practise the new discipline. Printed books of directions had been sent out from England; but they could not so truly convey the smartness of the motions, so very different from old Bland's exercise, as by seeing it performed.

I had repeatedly obliged the general by taking a musket and going through the whole, which he much approved of. Dining in company with him one day at the governor's, I am persuaded he purposely mentioned it to afford me the opportunity of exhibiting on being requested by the governor soon after dinner. Nor was this an idle unmeaning compliment, for several sergeants and corporals were

ordered to attend me every morning to learn the exercise. Some of the senior officers, likewise, requested the favour of being shewn the motions, and among these was my friend, the major; who living with the general at Vippery, I frequently breakfasted there and exercised him immediately after, the general most commonly looking on.

On my departure for the Northern Circars, I was honoured with letters of recommendation, from the general, to Colonel Todd, an old officer, who had the command there. At the same time, my friendly major made me a handsome present of a noble horse, well accoutred; saying; very good-naturedly, that he owed me the animal for having so unfairly dismounted me, but that he could not for the soul of him resist the opportunity I presented by my sailor-like riding: the accoutrements he desired my acceptance of as a proof of his friendly esteem, notwithstanding I had so often baffled and beat him at his favourite play. I sent my horse by land to meet me at Masulipa-



tam, for which place I embarked with others on-board a country ship.

My Dubash servant was a youth of a high Gentoo cast. He had never been on salt water before ; and, the weather being rough, he was so sea-sick, in crossing the violent surfs that roll so heavy on the Coromandel coast, that he was incapable of taking care of any thing : the provision he brought with him for the voyage, as appropriate to his cast, was therefore all stolen from him. To many, this might appear of little consequence, as there was plenty of provisions on-board the vessel ; but to him, poor fellow ! they were of no value, and I feel perfectly confident that he would have perished with hunger and thirst, sooner than have lost his cast by partaking in the smallest degree of either the water or provisions that were on-board, which his religious cast did not warrant. Of the provisions on-board, there was not an ounce that he durst touch ; and, had it not been for two or three Rajah-poots, who were passengers, and whose cast allowed his drinking some of the

water they had brought with them, though not to eat of their provision, I verily believe he would have died before we reached Masulipatam, on the sixth day. The sickness having cleared his stomach and bowels of all nourishment, he appeared, for the last eight and forty hours he was on-board, unlikely to live from hour to hour.

However I might deplore the infatuated prejudice arising from religious tenets, I pitied the youth, and took as much care of him as if he had been my brother. He was conveyed on shore by the first boat, under the care of the Rajah-poots, and soon got round again. And such were his attachment and fidelity ever after, that no temptation was strong enough to induce him to leave my service for superior rank and pay, which was too often tendered in an ungentleman-like way by officers of much higher rank than myself, who hinted to him, that, should he ever quit me, they would be glad to employ him.

He proved uncommonly clever, regu-




lated and managed all my other servants so well that I had not the smallest trouble with them, and continued with me for years, to the last moment of my stay in India; when, prostrating himself at my feet, while standing on the beach at Madras, ready to embark, he clasped them with his hands and wetted them with tears of regret. This is a small tribute of remembrance, due to my faithful Punnapa.

---

## CHAPTER XXVI.

*Arrival at Masulipatam: Lieutenant Barnewall's liberal offer to a stranger: observations on the superior liberality of the East, and consequent want of caution on returning to Europe. Mrs. W—, and her European servant.*



AT Masulipatam, I experienced most friendly and hospitable attentions from many; and, being invited by the chief, Mr. W—, I stopped a week there, to-

gether with a Lieutenant Barnewall, who was waiting the arrival of his horses and palanquin, which he had ordered with his servants from Madras. My horse (the present of Major Fitzgerald) came in company with them.

Lieutenant Barnewall was a gentleman of as respectable and antient a family as most in Ireland, and had a distant prospect of succeeding to a title. He was remarkably hard-featured, but possessed such an open cheerful countenance as would satisfy the greatest stranger of the liberality of his mind.

It had so happened, on our passage together from Madras, that we were not only strangers to each other, but equally so to all the other gentlemen on board, though there were nearly twenty. To account for our selecting each other out, and forming an intimacy that rapidly increased into a friendship, which continued for years and ended only with his life, I cannot, otherwise than by a sympathy of souls that drew us together.—There were several other pleasant gentle-



men on board; yet, farther than the common civilities of the day, we seemed to separate ourselves entirely from them.— Upon an after acquaintance, some of them said that our exclusive intimacy was remarked at the time, and accounted for on the supposition that we were old acquaintance. The following instance of the liberality of his mind may convey some idea of his character.

On the sixth day of our acquaintance, a few hours before we landed at Masulipatam, he led me apart and thus addressed me:—"By God! my friend, you must not take amiss what I am going to offer; for, by heaven, when I landed in India five years back, I should have been glad of a similar offer, for I came out poor enough. You have been but a short time in this country, and I know, by experience, your expenses must as yet have exceeded your income. Now, if it is with you as it was with me, and you are in want of cash, I have two hundred pagodas to spare, and at your service, until quite convenient to re-pay me." I confess

I had not then acquired a sufficient knowledge of the high-toned liberality of the East, to save myself from surprise at so generous an offer from an entire stranger.

A more mature acquaintance with European manners in India, ascertained, clearly to my satisfaction, that a generous plant of nature, removed from Europe and taking good root in our India settlements, would produce fruit in a more liberal and abundant manner than at home. There is a chilling caution in most acts of friendly aid in Europe, which is scarcely known in the British settlements in India. Not but there are characters in India who are barren enough; or, if forced into bearing, the fruit is crabbed, and the plant, as well as the fruit, despised. But, if there be the smallest particle of native liberality, it will thrive and grow to the fullest perfection when nourished and cherished all around.

And here, dropping the metaphor, I cannot refrain giving an opinion, however the fact may be lamented, that it is owing to an entire want of the caution they car-



ried from Europe, which long habits in the East have worn from their minds, (if old enough to have possessed any when they first embarked for India), that so many gentlemen, on their return home with handsome fortunes, have been ruined in a few years, and frequently without perceiving or knowing any thing of the mischief until it has happened, by incautiously engaging in specious speculations of banking-houses, and other projects. Unpleasant as it may be for gentlemen returning from the East with such warm glowing habits of generous unchecked liberality, to practise cold caution, they will find it a necessary and prudent virtue in European climates.

I was fortunate enough not to want the assistance so generously offered, but considered the obligation equally great. Our time passed merrily at Masulipatam, being always invited to the chief's, with whom, if not engaged particularly elsewhere, it was a luxury to sit at a table where the lady-governess did the honours of the house with so much vivacity.

A trifling incident that occurs to memory, which then produced a hearty laugh, may possibly create a smile now. The lady had prevailed on her husband to send home for an English footman to wait upon her, which, uncommon as it was and not allowed of, his interest had managed, and George made his appearance while I was there. It was a custom in India, at that time, as soon as dinner was removed, for some of the palanquin boes, or carriers, to bring in a large bason and ewer with water, with which they attended behind every chair; when, each person putting his hands at the back, one of the boes poured water on them from the ewer, while the bason was held underneath by others.

George, who had noticed this mode for a day or two, willing to shew his attention by waiting himself upon his mistress, took the ewer from the palanquin boe, and was continuing to pour the water on his mistress's hands, notwithstanding the lady had called out to him to desist, by speaking in Moors, and, as she thought, to the



Moormen, saying, “ Bus, bus, ge ;” which signifies, “ Enough, enough, you.” But George did not understand the Moorish tongue ; and, being doubtful whether it was plain English, he continued pouring, but watching a repetition of what his mistress said. The lady, likewise, being at that instant engaged in relating something laughable about men wearing whiskers, was not very attentive to the water pouring ; but, recollecting herself, she turned her face half round, saying, rather smartly, “ Bus, bus, ge, I say.” On which, poor George, thinking he could not mistake her meaning, very sheepishly put his chin close to her shoulder, whispering, that “ he would, with a great deal of pleasure, if his master were not present.” I believe no one heard what he said besides the good lady, and she thought it too good a joke to keep to herself ; therefore, as soon as she could refrain sufficiently from excess of laughter, she explained the whisper to the great entertainment of the whole company, poor

George excepted, who was obliged to retreat.

As all was peace now on the Coromandel coast, we were in no haste to quit Masulipatam, where the hospitality of the chief, vivacity of his lady, and pleasant attentions of all the principal inhabitants, made our time pass most agreeably.

## CHAPTER XXVII.

*Arrive at Ellore ; flattering reception ; again new disciplining the army.*

LIEUTENANT Barnewall accompanied me across the Circars to Ellore, where our respective regiments were quartered. The commanding-officer, Colonel Todd, to whom I had letters from General Smith and others, welcomed me as an old acquaintance ; observing, that, by prior letters he had received, he understood I was



qualified, although so young in rank, to teach him and the army under his command a new and superior mode of exercise. He begged, therefore, that I would consider myself as one of his family, and should expect to see me at his table whenever I was not particularly engaged. This was not only flattering, but of considerable importance in point of expense, as it saved my keeping house, except on such occasions as I chose, by particular invitations to brother-officers.

Orders were issued for new disciplining the troops, and my time was well filled up in attending many of my superior officers, who requested it as a favour, together with drilling the adjutant, sergeants, &c. who again drilled the men of their respective companies, under my inspection.

It was certainly a very honourable as well as singular circumstance to happen to a young officer, so soon after his entering the army. It was also a laborious task, but I possessed spirits and strength, at that time, equal to almost any thing,

and the credit I thereby obtained throughout the army was an ample recompense.

---

## CHAPTER XXVIII.

*Appointed judge-advocate ; volunteer to officiate as chaplain, by marrying, christening, burying, &c.*

AFTER several months busy employ this way, I was most unexpectedly appointed judge-advocate for the Northern Circars. I confess I felt very diffident in undertaking an office which I had never contemplated nor thought myself qualified for ; and, but for the friendly advice of the colonel and several other officers of rank, (who likewise promised their aid,) I should have declined it. Having accepted it, I seriously studied its very important duties ; and, by close attention, I trust that, for several years, while I held the



appointment, I discharged those duties faithfully and honourably.

I likewise volunteered another serious duty, although fuller of mirth and glee than most. I could not see with indifference the indecorous mode of burying our dead: there was no person appointed as chaplain or to officiate as such, either as to burials, Sunday-service, or any thing else that might betoken our having any religion. A military ceremony of firing over the grave was frequently all that was performed.

On a visit that was paid us by the chief, from Masulipatam, in his way to Rajamundra, to settle the jemibunda, or rents, which the different rajahs were to pay the three following years, I took the opportunity of mentioning to him the disgraceful appearance it had among the natives. The answer I received was, that the Company had provided for it, by allowing five pagodas a month to any gentleman that would so officiate. In reply, I said that no gentleman would accept so paltry a pittance for what was to be considered a duty,

though many might officiate without pay, when it suited their convenience; but, to perform it as a necessary duty, no officer would undertake it for less than an ensign's pay.

I persuaded the chief to represent this to the governor and council, offering to perform the whole duty of a chaplain to the garrison, without pay, until he obtained an answer. And this I did for about ten months in succession; marrying, christening, burying, and reading the service to the troops, under a large banyan-tree, every Sunday: but it was not acceded to. The marriages and christenings I regularly sent an account of to the clergyman at Madras, enjoining the parties to take the first opportunity of appearing before such clergyman, for his confirmation.

In company, the familiar call of judge or parson was much more frequent than my own name; and it was laughable enough, in convivial parties, to hear the judge or parson called upon for a merry song.



## CHAPTER XXIX.

*The East-India Company's military service preferable to others ; a concise account of the Sepoys, as officered by Europeans ; condition and advantages of such officers.*

I PASSED some of the pleasantest years of my life in India, without any thing very material occurring to myself. In truth, I consider the East-India Company's military service as far preferable to any other, for young men, especially, who have not good connections and interest to push them on to promotion in other services.

The Sepoys compose the most numerous, regular, and best-disciplined, body of black troops in the world. They are raised from among the natives, consisting of Moors, Rajapoots, Hindoos, and Pariahs, besides other intermediate casts, of whom there is seldom any want for recruits ; numbers generally attending every

parade, stretching and exhibiting themselves to the best advantage in their power, to induce the commanding-officer of the battalion to accept them when vacancies happen. They are modelled and disciplined chiefly after the manner of the army in England; that is, they are formed into complete, uniform, and regular, battalions, similar to our marching-regiments. They are very attentive and emulous to excel, and are therefore soon brought to the utmost exactness of discipline. In action, they are brave and steady, and have been known to stand where Europeans have given way.

But all this depends on their European officers; without them, they are of no more strength or effect than a rope of sand. They have very little confidence in each other, but experience has taught them, that, should a European officer lead them into danger, they will not be forsaken by him; and that, by his united skill and courage, he will most probably gain the victory, and at all events abide with them and share the same fate.



They have black officers, likewise, to each company: a subahdar and jemindar, who are commissioned; and havildars and naigs, who are non-commissioned, similar to our sergeants and corporals. These are all very useful, acting under the European officers; one of whom, a lieutenant or an ensign, commands each company. Their usefulness and services are manifest; securing to the Company the internal good order and preservation of their territorial districts, in many cases, better than Europeans.

They are sensible of their own consequence in the eyes of the other natives, who treat them with a correspondent respect. They are frequently detached, by one or more companies, to stations dependant on the chief garrison in that district. The command of such detachment is more or less advantageous to the European officer to whom it is given, and solicited for accordingly. An officer of Sepoys is held rather preferable to the same rank in a European regiment, but he is obliged to follow the fortunes and destinations of his own men, with his respec-

tive corps; leading a life often replete with adventures of a peculiar nature. An officer of Sepoys is frequently secluded from the rest of the world of his own colour and language, when up the country in a small command of a hill-fort, &c.; possibly some hundreds of miles in the interior parts of India, where none but natives are to be found. Yet such stations are in general fairly lucrative; nor is the condition hard to him who is acquainted with the language of the country.

Considering the immense extent of territory, with the many millions of inhabitants, (I believe surpassing the Roman empire at its height,) under the dominion of a company of merchants, the subjects of the king of an island many thousand miles distant; I may be allowed to conjecture, that, some centuries hence, the truth of such an event will be doubted; and, if credited, considered as the most extraordinary circumstance that ever occurred in the history of governments.



## CHAPTER XXX.

*Thoughts on the mode of settling the jemibunda which the rajahs pay to the Company, and consequences of mismanagement; the death of a rajah, by his rebelling or refusing to pay; severely wounded.*

It may not be considered wholly unconnected to relate here such ideas as then occurred to me, relative to the bad management in adjusting accounts with the native princes and rajahs, when settling the jemibunda, or rent, to be paid by them for the tract of land, with the villages, &c. which they hold of the Company as their lord-paramount.

Once in three years, these rajahs, or petty princes, are convened together by one of the Company's civil servants, (generally one who is in council or high in civil rank,) who is attended by a suitable parade of military, at the place appointed, when the terms for the three following

years are to be agreed on. The rajah pays dearly to continue in his sovereignty, yet the company is but little benefited.

The jemibunda is not much increased, if at all, but the *douceur* to the chief who fixes the jemibunda is squeezed to the utmost. The consequence is, that the rajah, finding he cannot support himself in his former splendour without squeezing his under-tenantry, takes half, or even two-thirds, instead of being satisfied with the usual division of one-third, of the crop. The husbandman, unwilling to leave his native fields, submits to this extortion as long as he can; at last, necessity drives him from home, and he flies beyond the Company's territory.

When at Condepillee, in Golconda,\* a small command, with four companies of Sepoys, I witnessed a certain proof of the difference between the prosperity and population of the country that did not belong to the Company, on the western side of the hills on which Condepillee-Fort

\* A province, formerly very famous for its diamond-mines.



stood, and the once-fertile plains of Golconda, to the eastward, belonging to the Company.

It is not for me to point out the remedy, though I conceive it would not be difficult. Those in the direction, or who have strong interest therein, and have experienced the *sweets* of settling a jemibunda, know how it is, but may not choose to acknowledge the fact. While others in the direction, who are unacquainted with such exactions, are not expected to believe it on the bare assertion of an individual; yet, if they would make proper inquiry, it might be found true.

I had not been twelve months in the Fort of Condepillee, when I was ordered to join my battalion and march against a rajah who had declined meeting the chief at Rajahmundra, where the jemibunda was to have been settled, and who afterwards refused to pay the rent affixed to the territory he held.

He depended too much on the natural strength of his situation, amid hills, bamboo woods, and jungles. He fell, and

his country was taken possession of; but not before we had lost several officers and many men. It was on this service that I was unfortunate enough to be severely wounded, insomuch as to render me incapable of farther active service. At the time, it was not expected I could possibly survive. The great loss of blood I sustained before I had chirurgical aid, coupled with a perfect resignation and ease of mind as to the event, saved me from fever, and, under Providence, by the help of good army-surgeons, preserved my life. But my strong ambitious hopes were all blasted and cut down. I had often boasted I could do as much on one leg as many did on two; and for a temporary exertion it was true enough; but I woefully found the difference between one, and two equally sound.

From what I experienced in the service, the few years I was in India, I quitted both with regret. But, finding it necessary, I endeavoured to reconcile myself to my fate as cheerfully as possible; and, there being great difficulty in procuring



such accommodation as I wanted, in my passing home from Madras, I determined to cross the Bay for the west coast, where I understood there was a ship, bound for England, not likely to be crowded with passengers.

---

## CHAPTER XXXI.

*Various anecdotes, viz. hunting a fox by crows: deer rescuing their fawn: fish falling in a shower of rain: deer bounding over soldiers heads in a line of march: a young woman carried off by a tiger in sight of the army.*

BEFORE I leave Madras, I will relate a few anecdotes that occurred during my residence in the service, which my Readers may believe or not, as it pleases them best, or as it may suit their digestive powers of faith.

If, in a company promiscuously met together, I were to assert that I had occasionally enjoyed a fox chase by hunting

with crows, instead of pursuing him with dogs, without further explanation, I might expect to be reckoned a *traveller*; yet, I am not afraid to declare it is a positive truth, that, at various times, when I have been riding out early in the morning without my dogs, in India, I have chanced to disturb a fox, who, soon discovering that there were no dogs, would become indifferent about me or my horse, and, running a short distance, would sit upon his haunches most unconcernedly until I had rode close up to him.

Having one day started a fox in this manner, and wishing to give my horse a good breathing, I put him in full speed after Mr. Reynard, cracking my whip and hallooing, as if chasing him with dogs.—Although this did not allow of his taking his seat, yet I plainly perceived that he cared but little about me. After awhile, however, I was joined by three or four of the common carrion crows, who followed close to reynard's brush, frequently darting their beaks at that or his rump, keeping him constantly snarling and snapping



on one side or the other, so as to impede his progress; and, but for my laughing at the oddity of the sport, I might at times have cut him with the lash of my whip.

After thus noticing this nature of the crows, I have repeatedly enjoyed the same diversion, until, with the crows' assistance, I have driven reynard into cover, and obtained a good morning's breathing for myself and horse.

I have also observed another circumstance equally curious relative to the wild deer in India, of which we frequently saw large herds gathered close together in an open champaign country, with their faces towards us, and would so remain completely stationary, until we drew near them; when sometimes, if our grey-hounds had not had a run at other game, we have slipt them, for the chance of separating a young fawn from the herd, and the still more unlikely chance, of the dogs being able to run that fawn down. I have heard of its being done, but never succeeded myself in doing so. The separating of a fawn from the herd on their first starting

away from the dogs, is not uncommon; as, when they first start, the fawn must consequently drop in the rear of the herd: then, should the dogs be able to make a fawn give one turn, it unavoidably becomes separated, and the dogs pursue it accordingly: it is then, that the art and dexterity of the dam is shewn, to save its fawn: the herd being no longer in danger from pursuit, it soon becomes stationary again, with their face, as before, turned to the dogs and huntsmen; the instant, however, that the dam discovers the peril its fawn is in, it quits the herd fearless of every danger, and rapidly cuts in between the dogs and the fawn, and by keeping just a small distance before the dogs, leads them a different course; in the meanwhile, the fawn joins the herd, and the dam having given the dogs a complete dance another way, leaves them in the lurch at pleasure, bounding away with as much ease, as a racer would from a coach-horse.

In a heavy shower of rain, while our army was on the march, a short distance



from Pondicherry, a quantity of small fish fell with the rain, to the astonishment of all. Many of them lodged in the men's hats; when General Smith, who commanded, desired them to be collected, and afterwards, when we came to our ground, they were dressed, making a small dish that was served up and eaten at the general's table. These were not *flying fish*, they were dead, and *falling* from the common well-known effect of gravity; but how they ascended, or where they existed, I do not pretend to account. I merely relate the simple fact.

At another time, part of the army marching in line, a small herd of wild deer suddenly came across; and, without halting or turning, fairly bounded over the men's heads without the smallest mischance to the men or themselves, continuing in a direct line until out of sight. These may be called *flying deer*, and approach near enough to the old lady's *flying cow*.

The conjecture was, that they had been

closely pursued by a tiger, who, not making his appearance, I suppose was not quite so hungry as the tiger, who, at another time, sprung upon and seized a sergeant's girl, as she rode on a bullock, accompanying the baggage belonging to the army, and carried her away in sight of the guard attending the baggage. This was a *flying tiger*, and I think may fairly be allowed to beat a *flying cow*.

And, as it may be prudent not to attempt flying our kite any higher for the present, I will turn to a different subject, and endeavour to recommend a little palatable kind of physic.



## CHAPTER XXXII.

*Anecdotes continued : effect of the burning heat in India : a commanding officer sent to Coventry : Captain Powel's recovery from a Ginge fever by drinking of claret : our pay-master Daniel's recovery from a flux by drinking milk : observations thereon.*

A LIEUTENANT Muirhead and myself were in the habit of taking our guns and making long excursions on foot, for the purpose of shooting; the rainy season had confined us from our sport for some time, when a promising morning, rather cloudy, tempted us to set off, attended each by one servant. Having walked a few miles to some favourite tanks, we found such abundance and variety of wild fowl, that, in a couple of hours, we killed more than two men could take home, and we did not choose to encumber ourselves with any. It was a lovely brown day, the sun scarcely shewing itself while we were out; no thought oc-

curred, or attempt was made by either of us to screen our faces, and we returned home to dinner well pleased with our day's sport. (It was then the custom in India, to dine early, sleep an hour in the heat of the afternoon, and after parade time, in the evening, those, who did not ride out for an airing, generally formed card parties until supper; but now I am informed they keep as fashionable dinner hours in India, as they do in London.) I was engaged the same evening to a card-party, but, when I arose from my couch in order to dress for the evening, I was much surprised to find the whole of my face that had been so exposed, completely blistered: as I never nursed myself for trifles, I joined the party, apologizing for my red face, and had to sustain as many jokes as the company thought proper to pass on me and Muirhead, (who was of the same party, with his face nearly as bad as mine,) for our shooting folly, as they termed it. We bore it all patiently, retaliating a little on such Jemmy Jessamys as were fearful of spoil-



ing their delicate complexions. This kind of attack and retort was pretty well worn out, when a fresh cause of mirth throwing me into a strong convulsive fit of laughter, I forgot my blistered countenance, and, in the haste of wiping the perspiration from my face, I drew my handkerchief so roughly over my nose, as to pull the outer skin completely away in the handkerchief, to the entertainment of all my brother officers in company, and no inconsiderable sensation of smarting pain to myself.

Slender as this circumstance may appear, it then, and has frequently since, puzzled me to account satisfactorily, for such a burning effect, produced by a comparative cool, pleasant, atmosphere that permitted us to take considerable exercise without fatigue, and very little visible sunshine the whole day.

The excess of laughter was occasioned by many disappointments that had that day arisen to several officers who were deprived of their dinners at home, and obliged to seek for one with any brother

officer who was not in the same predicament. It appeared, that the commanding officer's principal cook had had an entertainment the preceding evening, when several other gentlemen of the same profession, servants to other officers, were invited. Wordy disputes had arisen among these black culinary gentry, until from words they came to blows, when the master of the feast got so grievously beaten, that he was not able the following day to attend his duty: on learning the cause of his cook's non-attendance, the colonel was wrath, and without duly considering that these men were the private servants of the officers who employed them—and in garrison—he sent orders to the cuttwall of the place, (a kind of constable or petty magistrate), to take all those cooks up that were concerned in this affray, and flog and confine them in his choultry, or house of correction.

Although this battle of the cooks created a little merriment at first, among those whose cooks were out of the scrape, yet, when the masters of these servants



met together to consult what was proper and necessary for them to do, to evince their resentment of such unjustifiable arbitrary procedure, without committing themselves in a military point of view to their commanding officer, it became a serious business. Great as was the commanding officer's power, at a station some hundreds of miles from any other authority, civil or military, we (for my cook was one of the number) well knew he could not justify the extending his military authority over our domestic servants, unless they had done some military wrong; and, if this was allowed to pass unnoticed, the evil would probably be extended: after some consideration, a letter was signed by all concerned, and sent to the colonel, complaining of our cooks being so punished without a *hearing* on *their* parts, admitting that they had done wrong: complaining of his interference in a matter foreign to his military command, and requesting their immediate liberation. This not being attended to, a meeting of the principal officers then in garrison was

convened, (all being interested in the question,) to consider what was best to be done with such limited means as we possessed, to check the evil. The result was, that, it being of too little import to send a complaint to the commander in chief, or to the governor and council, the only means of bringing him to his senses that we could devise, without committing ourselves, was the old hackneyed punishment of sending him to Coventry. To execute this, there were difficulties, for, as our commanding officer, we could not decline answering any questions that had a military tendency, as well as the waiting upon him to make our reports; but, that done, any conversation the old colonel might begin was answered by a bow and quick retiring; this, to a man in his elevated station, was more mortifying than can well be conceived. In consequence, his table became quite deserted, where, prior to this, he was usually most respectfully attended; and, being so far distant from all other society, he was in a manner insulated.



As the most scrupulous attention was paid to military orders, he had no cause for complaint, except for the silent bow, and the declining his invitations, which he could not notice. The colonel was a good man, and a good officer; but a certain pride, consequent to his power, would not allow his acknowledging himself in the wrong, without a struggle to maintain that power undisputed. Harassing field-day exercises, at various and considerable distances from the fort, with other military manœuvres, were resorted to, in vain, to break the spirit of resistance, until, finding all he could do in this way was ineffectual, our commanding officer disliked Coventry so much, that at last he condescended to order the poor cooks to be liberated, and at the same time sent notes to each of their masters, desiring their attendance at head quarters.

At the time appointed, we went together: the colonel was walking in his vi-randa, and, stepping forward to meet us with a salute of the hat, which was as im-

mediately returned by us, and remaining in that position, he addressed us nearly in these words :—" Gentlemen, I beg you to accept my apology for what has occurred unpleasantly ; I hope the subject may be buried in oblivion ; and, as a proof that you meet my wishes, I request you will favour me with your company this day to dinner." We expressed ourselves happy and ready to accord with him, and, if the sincerity of the reconciliation was to be judged of by the quickness of our libations after dinner, the proof was abundant.

The Gingeë fever had raged violently, and carried off many men and officers. Captain Powel, who lay dangerously ill with it, was much esteemed in the army, and his intimate friends made anxious inquiries every time the doctors visited him ; by them, his case was soon pronounced hopeless. A brother-officer, observing the surgeon coming out from Powel's tent, stepped up and inquired how he was. " Poor fellow !" said Sinclair, the surgeon, " I shall not see him



alive on my return from visiting the other sick." As this passed close in front of his tent, Powel heard it; but, as he afterwards frequently mentioned in convivial company where Sinclair was present, he thought the surgeon lied a little, as he felt sound in heart, though so reduced as to be incapable of helping himself. He had repeatedly requested of the doctors, in the most earnest manner, that they would permit him to drink claret, which they peremptorily refused, declaring they would as soon administer poison. As soon, therefore, as Powel found they were gone, he ordered his Dubash servant to bring him a magnum bonum of claret, (holding three pints.) His servant, knowing how strongly this had been refused, expostulated a little, until his master swore, if he did not instantly obey him, he would get up and blow his brains out with a pistol. Fortunately for Powel, his Dubash did not recollect that his master was utterly incapable of rising: he brought him the object of his longing, drew the cork, and by his master's directions held

the bottle to his mouth. Thrice did he suck in the delicious beverage as long as his breath would allow, by which he drank more than half the contents. Somewhat satisfied, and fatigued with the exertion, he told his Dubash to place the remainder under his cot, and in a few minutes fell asleep.

Between two and three hours after, as the surgeon was returning and saw the Dubash standing out of the tent, he inquired why he was not in more close attendance on his master, if he were alive. He was told, in reply, that Captain Powel had been in a sound sleep for more than two hours, and still continued so. "A sound sleep," says Sinclair; "yès, poor fellow! I dare say it is sound enough: he must be dead: however, I will look at him." He then stepped into the tent; and, to his great surprise, found his patient in a fine breathing sweat, fast asleep. He felt his pulse, and, his astonishment increasing, he turned to the Dubash to make inquiries; when, the man pointing



to the magnum bonum under the cot, Sinclair took it up, saw what was gone, and heard the whole account. Replacing the bottle under the cot, he left the tent, saying to the Dubash, "Damn the fellow! let him drink as much as he likes when he awakes." Powel recovered, and lived many years after.

I likewise witnessed as singular a recovery from the bloody flux. Our paymaster, Mr. Daniels, at Ellore, was in the last stage of this disorder, and given up by the faculty. He had all along earnestly desired to drink milk, and as earnestly been refused. Having a wish to be removed to the sea-coast, they were conveying him gently in his palanquin, though the doctors doubted his being able to live the journey out. At the first pettah, or village, he stopped at, being clear of his medical friends, he ordered his servants to procure him milk, of which he drank freely, and continued taking that and nothing else the whole journey: he speedily found relief from the disorder, and by

perseverance in his milk diet soon recovered.

From various cases within my own knowledge, I am persuaded that many lives are lost from inattention to the urgent claims of those suffering under violent disorders. Medical gentlemen, I think, would do well to relax a little from fixed principles of practice, when Nature appears so powerfully to call for that kind of aid which suits her best, although it may militate against their professional judgment.

## CHAPTER XXXIII.

*Death of an officer who was refused porter in a fever ; an agreement entered into, in consequence, by several officers, to administer relief to each other if demanded ; peacocks and tigers found in the same wild haunts ; Condepillee, or the Hills of Tigers, abounding with monkeys, green pigeons, and paroquets ; men's nests in trees, from which the natives shoot tigers.*

I WITNESSED the death of one brother-officer, who, for the last day or two of a



raging fever, was continually calling for porter, but it was not allowed to be given to him. He urged his request in language so strong and pathetic, to all who called to see him, as induced some of us to join in his entreaties; but we were gravely told, that, whoever did give him porter, would murder him. He was, therefore, suffered to die *secundum artem*.

It made so strong an impression on several, who were of opinion that porter might possibly, or rather probably, have saved him, that we entered into a solemn written agreement with each other, which we signed, that, if any of the subscribing parties should by illness of any kind be brought to a dangerous state, and then express a strong desire for any thing which the doctors should refuse, any of the aforesaid parties, who had it in their power, would certainly administer to such claims, notwithstanding all the doctors might say.

It may be thought strange that wild peacocks and tigers should frequently be found in the same haunts. Not that there

is the slightest connexion or affinity between them, but that the same desolate, wild, woody, parts among the mountains seem to suit each. In going out, therefore, to shoot the former, it is necessary to go pretty strong, both in numbers and arms, to be guarded against the latter. The wild peacock is a tolerable good substitute for a turkey: but it was more for the sport than the value that I frequently went out in such parties, consisting generally of two or three officers, attended by some Sepoys. The English name of Condepillee is the Hills of Tigers, but they abound likewise in various sorts of monkeys; also large flocks of beautiful green pigeons and paroquets. I often tried but never could get near enough to the pigeons to kill any.

Some of the natives will go, singly, into the most unfrequented wild parts of these hills and remain for two or three days, in the hope of killing a tiger for the sake of his skin. As their method of proceeding appeared curious to me, the relation may be so to others. They fix on



a tree, in a likely situation, whose branches are high and convenient enough for them to build what they call a man's nest, which is nothing more than a number of sticks and boughs interwoven among the branches, big enough to lie along upon and high enough to be out of the spring of a tiger. To this they go in the day-time, carrying boiled rice and water sufficient for the time proposed to watch for the chance of a tiger's passing near enough to fire at with a match-lock gun. The principal danger is in the passing to and from their nest, which will serve them for a long time. I have, in some situations, seen two of these nests built near enough, though on different trees, to see, converse with, and aid, each other : but they commonly remain perfectly silent the whole time of watching.

## CHAPTER XXXIV.

*Poisonous snakes difficult to distinguish from the branches they lie upon ; the large mountain-snake ; a narrow escape from a covra manill, whose bite is certain death ; experiment on a scorpion.*



I APPREHENDED much danger from a poisonous little snake, lying along on the branches of low trees, &c. so nearly of the same colour with them as to be difficult to see and distinguish them, if molested, and near enough to inflict a wound which, if ever so slight, often proves fatal. They lie thus, to surprize small birds.

The large mountain-snake is said to inhabit some of the wildest parts of this extensive range of mountains. A petty Rajah, who resided about nine coss, or twenty-three miles, from Condepillee-Fort, sent us an invitation to come and see a very large one that was killed the day before. But the hot land-winds at that



time making the journey inconvenient and disagreeable, as we must have travelled with a suitable retinue of Sepoys and servants, it was declined. However, to satisfy our curiosity in part, we requested the Rajah to send a short junk, or piece, of the snake, by some coolies, whom we sent back with his Hircar for that purpose. When brought, it was so very offensive as to prevent our examining it closely, and we conceived must have been considerably swelled: it was much larger in circumference than either of us four European officers, two of us stout, though not lusty. I have seen live snakes of this species carried about by show-men, which were full as big round as the stout calf of a man's leg.

The covra capell and covra manill are reckoned the most poisonous snakes in India. Every man who has been much in the interior must have seen the former in abundance. I had a very narrow escape from injury by one of the latter.

On the evening of my arrival at Samulcotah, in the Northern Circars, my Dubash

informed me, that, on opening my camp-cot to prepare it for my sleeping on, they discovered a covra manill lying quietly coiled up under my pillow, from which the servants had shrunk back with fear. Taking a bamboo in my hand, accompanied by other officers, we went to the cot; and, one of them turning the pillow back with the end of his cane, the gentleman was still lying coiled up, and, on rearing his head, received such a blow from my bamboo as completely lowered his crest and incapacitated him from doing mischief. I had not used my cot for three or four preceding nights, but had contented myself, where ever we had halted, with sleeping on a camel's-hair cloth spread on the ground. We concluded, therefore, that the snake had, during the last halt, while the cot was placed with other baggage on the ground, crept into this snug birth. How we might have agreed as bed-fellows was, fortunately, not put to the test.

Having frequently heard that scorpions, when caught and tormented, would, after



ineffectually trying to obtain relief, sting themselves to death, and having caught a very large black scorpion, of rather more than ten inches in length, I determined at first to preserve him in spirits. I saw him running across my garden, and, being desirous of securing the fellow without injury to his appearance, and danger of being stung by him, I hit upon this simple method. I took a stick that had a crotch at the end, and pinned him to the earth, where I held him securely until my Dubash servant brought me a piece of string, with which, making a running noose, it was easily put over his tail at the time it was turned up ready to strike whatever might annoy it; when the noose was drawn tight, I suspended him in the air at arms length, until, with the assistance of a brother officer, who was walking in the garden with me at the time, we slipped another noose down over his body, drawing that close, just behind his claws. By these means we had the fellow under complete control, and took him to a table to examine the horrid insect, which, by a sting

with its tail, might have deprived either of us of a limb; and as I had understood, in the West Indies, as well as in the East, not improbably of life. But this, I conceive, must depend on the state of the blood.

The truth of the accounts we heard of its power, and intuitive knowledge how to destroy itself by its own venom, was argued: its death to a certainty was determined on; therefore, whether we killed it by putting it alive into ardent spirits, or whether we caused it to destroy itself, if it possessed such power, seemed immaterial: we resolved, therefore, on making the experiment, and proceeded in the following manner:—stretching the two ends of the string that fastened round the body, across the table, its power of moving was much confined; the other string was taken away that it might have the free use of its tail. With a fire-brand I first gradually approached the head in front, without touching it; it strove all in its power to shrink from and avoid the fire, curling its tail as far over the head as it could extend, apparently with intent to strike the enemy



that gave such annoyance ; but it never attempted to injure itself, even when the fire was advanced close to the head ; the claws, also, being quite at liberty, frequently seized hold of the brand, and, while it had such hold, the tail was forced so far over in front as to form a circle.

No such effect being produced as we had been told to expect, I next applied the fire-brand to the back of the Scorpion, moving it from the after part of the head, all along to the joints of the tail, which, producing no other effect than causing it to strike its tail against the fire-brand, we conceived this fiery ordeal sufficient to refute all the stories we had heard relative to the scorpion destroying itself, and instantly put an end to its misery, by plunging it into some strong arrack.

## CHAPTER XXXV.

*Extraordinary view of a thunder-storm when sitting far above it, with a description of the fort where it happened; its effect on the Author, and his observations.*

THE singular appearance of a thunder-storm, which I witnessed at Condepillee, deserves a better description than I am capable of giving; to enable the Reader to form a clearer conception, it may be proper to give him some idea of the fort and situation.

The whole comprehends three forts, one within the other. The pettah, or village, is to the eastward on the outside the fort, at the foot of the hills, and opening on the plains of Golconda. The wall of the outer fort (as it is called) is some miles in extent, encompassing several hills; the wall itself is built not much unlike some of the stone fences to be seen in various parts of



England, nor is it stronger. The middle fort is so high up the hills as to make the greater part of it inaccessible, by perpendicular rocks. The passage up from the lower fort is formed by regular cut stone steps, several feet wide, and winding in its ascent up the valley. I have run up it in twenty minutes, but it required three quarters of an hour to walk it leisurely.

Little or nothing had been done, when I was there, to strengthen it, though very capable of improvement. The inner fort was an exceeding high pinnacle of a rock, completely inaccessible every way except by a narrow path up stone steps, so high from one to the other, and insecure withal, as to require both hands and feet to climb up in safety. A large stone tank, or reservoir, hollowed out of the solid rock, was always full of water, and must have been supplied by the clouds, which often encompassed and crowned its head. Not being commanded by any other height, a few men could defend it against any force, so long as they had provision.

In hot weather, we frequently ascended

to the middle fort, on account of the pleasant temperature of the air ; the difference being such, that, while people below would be gasping for breath from the heat, we could with pleasant ease move about, or even play at trap-ball in this higher fort.

I had one afternoon climbed up to the Devil's Arse-a-Peak\*, to enjoy the extensive prospect, and breathe a cooler air, when the clouds began to gather along the eastern side of the mountain, about midway between me and the plain, or lower fort, where we resided. It was not long before the lightning and thunder produced a tremendous, but most awfully grand, effect from the clouds below me. The lower fort, the pettah, and plains, were deluged with rain, while I sat on high, with a serene, beautiful, clear sky over my head, calmly looking down, delighted with the playful appearance of the lightning, as it darted in beautiful zig-zags from the clouds at my feet, while the loud peals of

\* A name given to the upper fort by the English.



thunder reverberated along the different valleys between the mountains.

I have seen many grand sights, but never any thing comparable to the superlatively-glorious view that was then presented. I fancied myself like Jupiter, on Mount Olympus, when hurling his thunderbolts. Nay, more, my heart bounded in ecstasy and grateful adoration to the Deity, who thus afforded me a kind of foretaste of supreme pleasure and happiness, arising from inward sensation more than from the grand outward spectacle I had been witness to, and which, prior to that moment, I could form no conception of enjoying. I felt as if etherial rather than mortal; and it was not until long after the storm below had been dispersed, and the shades of evening were approaching, that I could persuade myself to leave the spot where I had experienced such exquisite mental felicity.

Possibly there are many who may smile at my declaring, that often since, when I have been in critical situations whether I should live or die, the recollection of this

faint view of what a refined mind is capable of enjoying, has tended more to divest me of fear concerning death, and encouraged the hope of exchanging this life for a better, than the knowledge of any other circumstance, I have otherwise obtained.

---

## CHAPTER XXXVI.

*A royal tiger destroying a large buffalo; another royal tiger, his demeanour, with the effect on a horse and rider.*



MUCH has been said of the strength, size, &c. of the royal tiger, (the largest of the species,) and many doubts have arisen of what is reported concerning him.

Some years back, I felt grievously offended with a near relation, who, on my answering a question put to me by a gentleman in company, relative to the reported strength of the fore paws of a royal tiger,



broke into a loud laugh, exclaiming, “ *a traveller!*” The irritable effects I experienced from so unexpected an affront, on a point well known to thousands, and the consequences I made him instantly feel, have served ever since to put me on my guard in company, to prevent subjecting myself to a similar unpleasantness.

The most extraordinary instance of their strength, that came within my own view, was on a visit to a gentleman, who had contracted to supply a quantity of stone chunam, or lime, for the Company’s use. He resided in a village formed chiefly of his own workmen, in a district across the Kistna, out of the Company’s territories. It was a complete wilderness where he lived, and without any other European. We made a party of four, taking a guard of Sepoys with us.

About midnight, when on this visit, we were alarmed by a cry of “Burra pillee, burra pillee,” “a great tiger, a great tiger,” by numerous loud voices, with considerable screaming from the natives living in the pettah. Our sentinel turned out the guard;

we were soon up and armed, and sallied forth with lighted torches. Pursuing a track of blood for more than a hundred yards, we found a buffalo\* that had been dragged away, after he was struck, and torn from the pickets, or ropes, which he was fastened to, by a tiger, whom we did not see, the lights, together with the alarm, having made him quit his prey. The buffalo was stretched along the earth, and dying. The tiger had struck him in the throat with one of his fore paws, so deep as to injure the wind-pipe and occasion his death. Having a large hand and long fingers, I tried in vain to put the ends of my fingers into the holes which the tiger's claws had made in the buffalo's neck; from which, I leave the Reader to form his own judgment of the royal tiger.

I likewise met with one of the family, when taking a morning's ride before breakfast, who behaved in a very gentleman-like manner, not being in the least disturbed himself, though he put both me

\* A tame animal, the size of an ox, kept for work.



and my horse into a terrible aguish trembling, followed by a hot fit and profuse perspiration. I had ordered my gurra-walla, or horse-keeper, to wait for my coming back at some little distance from the fort, instead of accompanying me. I rode on smartly by myself for four or five miles, when, doubling the projecting point of a hill, I spied a handsome royal tiger sitting on his breech, with his hind foot, which I fancy he was licking, up to his head; when the noise we made occasioned him to look towards us. My horse must have seen him as soon as I did, for he made a dead halt almost down upon his haunches, and nearly unseated me. The royal animal, within two stones throw, neither altered his position nor changed countenance; but, gentleman-like, seemed to wait our explaining the motive of so unceremonious a visit. Both my horse and myself seemed so fascinated by his royal presence, that we could not take our eyes from him a moment.

I tried in vain to turn my animal's head; but, having a strong cutting Moorman's

bit in his mouth, with considerable exertion I forced him back, until the point we had doubled relieved our eyes from the enchantment that had so rivettéd our attention. My horse was no longer ashamed of turning his back: he was of a high-bred Persee cast, very fleet and mettlesome, yet the perspiration dropped from him like water, attended with a nervous shaking; and so little was he disposed to make use of his legs, that it was some time before I could force him into a gallop. During this unpleasant delay, my eye was more over my shoulder, looking back, than forwards; and I had made my mind up, in case his majesty should again make his appearance to know our business, to leave my horse to settle that point and trust to my own limbs: but his majesty seemed very indifferent about us, either in or out of sight. My horse, at length, began to find the use of his limbs, and we were not long returning home.

My gurrawalla could not conceive what was the matter with the horse; and, when informed, blessed himself and Ali, his




prophet, a thousand times. The horse was not well for some days after, nor did he ever like to take that path again, even in good company.

---

## CHAPTER XXXVII.

*Alarms in travelling through a wood, in a stormy night.*



ANOTHER time, I had a much longer alarm when travelling in company with a brother-lieutenant, through a wood, in the night. Being ordered to another station, we had travelled two days, making regular halts with our baggage, servants, and a small guard of Sepoys.

Resting under a pleasant tope of trees during the heat of the last day, and amused by the agility of some dancing-girls from an adjoining village, we sent our baggage and all our articles off some hours before,

that our quarters might be prepared on our arrival; keeping only our horses and the servants belonging to them. Unluckily, we took too long a nap in the afternoon; so that, by the time we reached a long wood we had to pass through, of near twelve miles in extent, the sun was going down, and the clouds threatened a storm. Prudent men would have returned to the village, where there was a tolerable choftry for shelter, and where we might have been supplied with a good curry and rice, if required; but soldiers do not like a retrograde motion when duty urges them forward.

We put on a dog-trot, as fast as our horse-keepers could travel; but it grew dark and stormy before we reached one third of the way through the wood. The variety of discordant tones, from the numerous wild animals that inhabited so large a wood, cannot be easily conceived. The close of the day, when most of them leave their hiding-places, coupled with the approaching storm, probably increased their customary serenade. That of the



jackall was the only distinguishable note, except, that wild boars twice rushed across our path-way, gnashing their tusks; but they were gone in an instant, and were the only animals we really saw. It was an undistinguishable chorus of hideous wild notes, most of them, probably, from insignificant animals, but not the less alarming; and we well knew there were animals, prowling about for prey, not to be trifled with; against whom, from the darkness of the night, we could not possibly be guarded by any warning of their approach. All we could do was to ride with our pistols ready cocked in our hands; to which, as a preventive, we added all the terror our united voices were capable of inspiring, from a general well-known conceit, that all wild animals are frightened at the human voice. Conceiving, therefore, that an old war-like sea-song would make as much rumbling noise as any other we could adopt, for a length of time, we roared them out lustily, directing our attendants to join us in noise, though not in song, of which they knew not a

syllable ; but they made it up in quavering and screaming. And, in sober truth, if ever the “human voice divine” was likely to terrify, I think our Dutch concert had a fair chance of performing it to advantage, as any that was ever attempted.

The storm, likewise, came on most violently when we arrived within the last two miles of this tedious long avenue through the wood. The lightning, thunder, wind, and rain, were so severe, that our horses turned tail to the storm, and remained immoveable for more than half an hour. In this situation, our attendants had rather the advantage, by taking shelter under our horses, where they sat like monkeys on their haunches. When the storm abated, we proceeded ; all was then quiet, and we derived consolation from gaining the plain in safety. Riding briskly near three miles farther, we got to our quarters somewhat recruited in spirits, which dry clothes and a bottle or two of Madeira completely restored.



## CHAPTER XXXVIII.

*Hawking ; tiger-shooting by Europeans ; hunting the wild boar ; a hot struggle between a hawk, a grey-hound, and a monkey ; a hat carried away by a hawk ; an Irish hoist.*



THE Moormen in India are very fond of hawking, which, to a keen sportsman, I thought more dangerous than either shooting tigers or hunting the wild boar. In what manner it was formerly followed in Europe, when considered a royal sport, I do not know ; but in India, where the game frequently soar and fly, a sportsman sees but little of the sport, unless, with his eyes constantly fixed on it, he follows as hard as he can ride, guiding his horse he knows not whither, at the risk of his neck.

Tiger-shooting may seem hazardous ; but, as far as I have seen or known concerning it, there is not much sport and lit-

tle or no hazard. Along the skirts of woody hills, where tigers are supposed to haunt, there are commonly ruins of old stone buildings to be found, nearly overgrown and hid by trees and underwood. The parties, going on such exploits, provide a kid or goat, and fasten it to a bush in good view of the ruin, on the top of which they secure and hide themselves when evening approaches. The poor animal, thus tied, soon begins to bleat loud enough to attract the notice of any tiger that is within a reasonable distance. It requires a good look out on every side to watch a tiger's approach, as he creeps along slow and close: when discovered, the muskets are pointed and follow his motions, until the captain of the party gives the word *fire*. The most favourable moment is, when the tiger crouches to make his spring at the goat. It is usual likewise, to have other muskets, ready loaded, carried by attending sepoy, in case the first fire should not kill the beast.

Hunting the wild boar is far preferable, requiring both courage and address. There



are dogs in India well calculated for this diversion. It is requisite to be out early in the morning, that you may ride to the ground, where you expect to find one, before day-light. Before these animals retire to their haunts within the woods, they resort to some favourite watering-place to lave and drink ; the huntsman's aim is to intercept them on their return to the wood.

When found, the dogs are slipped, and the animal, aware of his danger, attempts to gain the wood. Dogs, that are well trained and used to it, will frequently make their attack in the following way: the boldest will advance a little wide from each side of the boar's head, ready to seize a favourable opportunity, when the fierce animal is thrown off his guard, by an attack, in his rear, from other dogs, who, assailing either his hind legs or flanks, may trip him on his side. Or, being wounded by a spear from a horseman during the chase, and turning on such adversary, an opportunity offers to the dogs of seising him to the best advantage, and keeping clear of his terrible tusks, than which no-

thing can well be more irresistibly destructive, wherever the enraged animal can make a stroke. Dogs frequently fall victims to their fierce rashness in attacking, nor are the horses or horsemen free from danger. A keen bold sportsman will ride up as near to the animal as he thinks he can make certain of throwing his spear, with strength enough to pierce his side; but both horse and rider should know what they are about and be gradually trained, by keeping a more respectful distance until both are well aware what is to be done the instant the spear is thrown.

I will endeavour to make this understood better, by describing the manœuvre. Riding up about half or three quarters speed, as it may happen, the sportsman, with his spear in one hand and the bridle tight in the other, and standing in his stirrups, should, at the moment he has thrown his spear, wheel his horse short round upon his heel, otherwise they run considerable risk from the highly-enraged animal, when wounded, turning sharp upon them.

I witnessed one accident of this kind,



where Ensign L——, a fine-spirited little fellow, having wounded the boar, from want of address in the management of his horse, or the horse not readily answering the bit, the boar turned quick enough to strike the horse with his tusk; and, ripping up his bowels, threw both man and horse. Fortunately, L—— escaped any farther injury than the fall, as the men on foot, armed with spears, and some of the horsemen who dismounted, ran up with their spears to the aid of the dogs and soon dispatched the boar.

Few persons have been in the East-Indies, that must not have frequently witnessed the daring audacity, with which the crows and kites will approach, to seise and fly away with any of the provisions which are taken to or from any table of the Europeans. The following was the most remarkable of any I was witness to.

I had some gentlemen to dine with me; we were parading up and down in the viranda, at the time the servants were conveying the various articles for dinner, across the yard, which was pretty extensive.

On one side of the yard was a shed, where my grey-hounds were tied up, and, abreast of them towards the centre, was a large tree, at the foot of which I had a monkey fastened, whose antic tricks frequently afforded diversion. This was all in view as we walked in the viranda, when a kite darted down and seised a large roasted fowl in his talons from off the dish, which one of the servants was bringing across the yard, but, before he could clear the yard, the heat of the fowl (as we supposed) made him let go his hold, when it fell close to one of the grey-hounds, who then seised the fowl as his prey; but, his chaps being burnt in the same manner, he dropt it; the same kite, or some other, (for there were several flying round,) darted repeatedly at it again, but the grey-hound kept good guard, snapping at the kite when it flew near, and barking at the hot fowl, which he in vain attempted to hold between his jaws: Jacko likewise stretched his chain as far as he could, to get at the dainty bit; on observing which, in the midst of our diversion at the spectacle, I ordered the ser-



vant to tear a limb of the fowl, and throw it to the monkey. Poor Jacko also found the part that was given to him, too hot to hold ; he jabbered and shook his paws, and, when any kite darted down to seise it, put on as fierce a look as he could muster, against his enemy, while, the better to secure his dinner, he hugged the hot morsel to his breast ; that however could only be momentary, when a renewal of his grimaces, shaking his paws, scratching his breast, with significant looks for protection, furnished us with abundance of merriment.

---

## CHAPTER XXXIX.

### *Indian conjurors.*



WITHOUT any pretensions to being thought a conjurer myself, I may venture to give a general opinion of the relative

merits of the natives of Europe and those of Asia. In a variety of slight-of-hand practices, the Asiatics may be reckoned at least equal to their European brethren, while some of their objects of deception and dexterity appear on a far larger scale and more difficult to account for. As specimens, I will mention an instance or two.

At a *chaveau*, or treat, given to a large party of officers, in a *tope*, or grove, of mangoe-trees, a travelling conjurer and son made their *grand saalam*\* in the course of the afternoon, offering to shew their exploits. The boy, who might be eleven or twelve years old, knelt down at about three-score yards distance: any officer was desired to take a melon and place it on the boy's head. The father, driving a *crõtch*-stake into the ground near to us, charged his match-lock gun with powder, and then requested any of the company to load it with a bullet which he produced. Kneeling down, he took his aim by resting the point of his long gun on the crotch;

\* The name of an Asiatic mode of salutation, especially towards superiors.



and, firing, shot through the melon. This he performed three times, and there was no appearance of imposition, the boy being closely watched by officers who stood a little apart on each side of him. We credited the father accordingly for his excellent shot; but he so completely deceived us in some other feats of dexterity, that, at the close of his performances, we concluded there must have been some deception in his firing at the melon, though we could not discover it. One of his tricks was as follows.

He put the boy into a round basket, with a lid to cover it; but first sent the boy with another such basket empty, which he placed on the earth about the same distance he had been fired at. When the lid of the basket was tied down over the boy, the father spoke, and the voice answered as from the boy in the basket, close to us. The father ordered his son to remove into the basket that had been carried and placed at the distance of sixty yards or more, empty; and, in about the time it might have taken to walk that dis-

tance, the son called to his father, the voice sounding as from the farther basket.

On this, the father untied the lid, opened and turned the basket up, empty; and, ordering the boy to shew himself, he did so by rising up from the distant basket. This feat, or trick, was repeated, but we could not discover it.

At another time, I have seen a girl, about fifteen years of age, suspended in the centre of a large tent, without any apparent means of supporting her from falling. She was huddled all in a heap and swaddled thick with clothes, so as to shew only her face, which looked sickly. We were not allowed to touch either her or the bundle she was wrapped in, but we cut the air above and below her every way, with our swords, as we walked round her, without being able to account by what means the bundle, with the girl in the middle, was suspended. I resign it, therefore, for solution, to more able conjurors than myself.

A very brave eccentric character, then



a subaltern in the army, having made too free with the rosy god of wine, was going home to his quarters on the skirts of the pettah, when he met with the following singular incident, which he related the next morning, nearly in the following terms, but with much more humour.

“ Bother me as you will,” said S—n, “ but I must either have been be-de-villed or be-conjured last night, after getting my skin full of wine. Do you remember how quietly I marched off? Och, why I thought myself a match for ye all, and the d—l into the bargain: but the old one played me a trick for that; and now I’ll tell you all about it. So soon as I saw it was dark, and black as Tophet, why I thought I would give my Masolgee the slip, and let no body know how strait I could walk. Well, off I went, but soon found I was all over bewitched, and strangely altered; I was no longer myself, for my legs would not obey me, and my nose brought me up once or twice, before I felt any thing with my arms; bad luck to them, for not keeping a better look out. Well, no matter for that;

it was but a trifle, as it only knocked off a bit of the bark, and again I sallied, flourishing away with my arms to try if they were not as long as my nose: but old Nick owed me a spite, for sure enough some great big monster of a conjurer crept under my arms and gave me a hoist into the air, before I knew where I was, and the d—l a bit could I help myself: Och, I found my body surrounded by limbs as hard as iron; I was laid along my belly, my feet dangling down, dancing upon nothing; my face grazed on a huge big scrubbing brush; with my hands dangling like my feet, so as I could only feel the monster's slimey smooth skin, which seemed without beginning or end, or any thing I could grasp hold of: well, what could I do, but kick and roar? which, by St. Patrick, I did and lustily too; but the monster made no more of hoisting and throwing me about, than you would of a kitten; first up into the air, then down again, next to this side, then to that, until I thought the breath was gone all snug out of my body, jewel. Well, I began at last to think of



some prayer, and sure enough, my honey, the old one knew with what I was beginning to bother him, for he gave a terrible big roar and shook like a bog-trotter in an earthquake, until, letting me drop down, I came once more on mother earth, or, as you may say, on earth and water, for he plumped me clean enough on a fine soft bed of mud, without breaking any bones, and pretty well sobered me into the bargain. How I scrambled home, I know not, only that my Dubash and my Masolgee came just in the nick, to pick me out of the mud: and this morning, when I was telling to my saucy servant, all I could recollect or make out of the d—d hoist I had had, the dog grinned, saying there was a big buffalo standing close to where they found me; maning, I suppose, that I had been riding the buffalo.”

Strange as this gentleman's account of the transaction appeared, it was pretty evident, that, in reeling towards his Bungalow, he had strayed a little out of his path to where some buffalos were sleeping at the side of a muddy tank, where

these animals are fond of indulging themselves, like a hog : they usually sleep with their snouts stretched forwards about a foot or more from the ground, and their large arched horns pointing back over their neck. It was easy to account, therefore, for a person who was walking in the dark in a line with the buffalo's head, to be tript up, and, falling forwards over the neck and between the horns, with his legs stradling across the animal's nose, and his arms down by the shoulders, it would not have been an easy matter for a *sober* man to extricate himself.

The buffalo, being thus disturbed, would naturally rise, when, with the confused ideas at the time, aided by the darkness of the night, a slight motion of the animal to get rid of his troublesome load, might readily enough convey all the sensations our friend S—n describes to have felt.



## CHAPTER XL.

*Dutch hospitality ; Free-Masonry.*

I HAVE mentioned the generous liberality of British settlers in the East, and will now relate a curious anecdote of Dutch hospitality.

I had been some years up the country without an opportunity of seeing salt water, which I felt an inclination to bathe in. Being within half a day's ride of Jagganaporam, a Dutch settlement on the Coromandel coast, I obtained leave of absence for a week ; and, sending off a few servants with what little baggage I might want, I followed on horseback, with no other attendant than my Gurrawalla, and provided with a letter to the Dutch governor, from my commanding officer, to signify who and what I was.

It was pleasant, promising weather, when I left Samulcotah ; but, about the

middle of my journey, such a torrent of rain fell, without wind, as made it difficult to breathe, and at times I was compelled to put my hand over my nostrils, to shelter them while I drew a long breath. In less than an hour, the nullahs, or rivers, whose sandy bottoms were quite dry before, were so full as to oblige my horse to swim in crossing them.

It was near dusk when I reached Jagganaporam; the rain had ceased some time, and, as is often the case in India, a beautiful fine evening succeeded. I dismounted in the pettah and left my horse to the care of my gurrawalla: of my other servants, with the baggage, I could learn no tidings. Necessity, therefore, compelled me to enter the fort as I was, and to wait on the governor in that soured and pickled condition. I found him and a few gentlemen of the settlement enjoying themselves in the open air, smoking and drinking. I was complimented with a seat, and asked if I would “a pipe rooken and a soopky drinken?” to which I readily answered, “yaw, mynheer;” and soon found



I had little or nothing else to trust to, to guard against the ill effects of remaining in my wet clothes. It is true, that neither of us understood each other sufficiently to hold conversation; but, between Dutch and French, I acquainted them repeatedly with my uncomfortable situation, and what ought to have been sufficient intelligence to them, was my wringing the wet from my garments and shewing my boots full of water. Yet, with the true coldness of a Dutchman's heart, I was suffered so to remain without the smallest aid, but a repetition of "will you another pipe rooken and a soopky drincken?" Literally, therefore, did I smoke and drink for life.


I think I was in my third pipe, taking care likewise to fill my glass whenever the bottle came to hand, when an addition was made to the company by six or seven other gentlemen of the settlement. One of them I soon found to be the doctor; and, possessing much greater vivacity than the rest, I also discovered him to be a

Free-Mason, and, drinking to him, soon made myself known as a brother. He shifted his seat near to me in an instant, and was soon satisfied I was the higher mason : pointing out to him my distress, he hurried me away to his house, where I was stripped and soon equipped with dry clothes. I would fain have gone to rest, but he advised me by all means (having sat so long in wet clothes) to go back and eat a hearty supper, giving me at the same time something to drink. I did so, accompanied him again to the governor's, was introduced to the governor's wife and daughters, (lively pleasant girls,) got into good spirits, laughed at my Dutch rigging, eat and drank myself into a perspiration ; and, after a good night's rest, rose the following morning, free from any of the expected ill consequences.



## CHAPTER XLI.

*A strange thief; method of shaming the most audacious.*



FROM among the variety of trials before me as judge-advocate, I select two; the one as a proof of an innate ungovernable principle for thieving, even where no benefit could arise: the other, to evince that the most audaciously hardened may be brought to a sense of shame.

A young soldier, who had often been punished for pilfering and stealing from his comrades and others, was again confined under a similar charge. Two other soldiers were under confinement for different offences at the same time: they broke out undiscovered in the night, were not to be found the next morning, and were all reported as deserters. Parties were sent after them, and European soldiers, answering their description, were

traced beyond the Company's territories, but not taken.

For more than two months after, scarcely a night passed without articles being lost from the officers' quarters within the fort : swords, sashes, gorgets, and clothing of all kinds : none of which could either be made use of or converted to money in that part of the country. Vexation on the part of the loser, and laughter at the unaccountable strangeness of the circumstance, were excited every day. Even the soldiers' victuals, with some of their cooking-utensils, were stolen ; and, as it was well known that none of the natives would make use of them, or even could be forced to it, it appeared the more wonderful. Some of the soldiers swore the fort was haunted, and went so far as to declare they had seen the apparition : this opinion was increasing within the garrison, and fellows, that would have followed their officers to any danger against an enemy in the day, were fearful of stirring out alone in the night.



A sergeant, going his rounds early on a dark morning, saw something flit across, but it was gone and out of sight in an instant. The guard attending him were alarmed, and he was obliged to use strong language to his corporal and a file of soldiers, whom he ordered to remain and watch while he completed his rounds and made a report to the officer of the main-guard. The officer judged it best to let things remain until morning; when, on removing a quantity of old gun-carriages, wheels, and a variety of rubbish, lying near the place where the sergeant saw the apparition vanish, a den was discovered, inhabited by the runaway thief, and every article he had stolen for more than two months, except the provisions, was found with him.

The other case was a soldier of the name of King, one of the cleanest, smartest, and most clever, fellows in the whole regiment; he wrote an excellent hand, had been repeatedly promoted, and was as often broken for drunkenness. When drunk, he was a madman; while he continued

sober, a pattern to the regiment for correct discipline and good behaviour. He, at last, became completely hardened by repeated punishment at the halberts, and received one hundred and fifty lashes soon after a Major Donaldson had joined the regiment; who, being on the parade at the time, addressed the regiment in strong, pathetic, soldier-like terms on the subject of punishments, until the whole parade were seriously attentive and affected. He then closed his address by admonishing the culprit, who, to prove his hardihood, had held the halberts without being tied, and received the punishment without flinching. King, who, at this time, had folded his arms across, as if listening with ease and composure to the major, his back streaming with blood from his bare shoulders, with astonishing audacity, asked the major how many stripes he thought he (King) might have received since he had the honour of serving the Company. "Too many," replied the major, "I fear, to have done you good." Continuing in the same



position, King replied, " I have had the honour to receive just nine hundred and fifty; and, if you please, major, I will take another fifty now just to make the score even, and let it stand over to the next account."

Both officers and men stood aghast at his impudence. He was ordered to the hospital, with an assurance, that, should he again subject himself to the sentence of a court-martial, means would be considered to punish him more effectually. In a short time after this, he was brought to trial for drunkenness, disobedience, and striking an officer when conveying him to the guard-room. He was found guilty, and it was the opinion of most in the garrison that his punishment would be extremely severe. The sentence, however, was to receive fifty lashes only, but on his bare breech, like a boy.

This man, who had never been known to require the aid of a doctor but from the effects of punishment, was so affected at the thought of being thus disgraced, that

he was taken ill and sent to the hospital, where he continued several months. And it was the general opinion that he would have continued there until he died, had it not happened that a poor unfortunate fellow, who had deserted thrice, was sentenced to be shot; and, on those occasions, it was usual to make a last request, through the medium of the judge-advocate, for the pardon of the prisoners confined or sentenced for minor offences.

This done, King left the hospital in a day or two, kept himself sober, and behaved so well, that, in a few months, he was promoted to a halbert; and when I left India, had the credit of being one of the best sergeants in the army.



## CHAPTER XLII.

*Bramins\* . Perform a miracle.*



I do not pretend to any learned knowledge or acquaintance with the Gentoo religion, yet I cannot refrain from making one remark; the Gentoos are accused as idolatrous heathen worshippers of images, which from outward appearances they may seem to be; but, from many inquiries among the Bramins, in whatever part of India I made any stay, it appeared that the various images they carry in procession, are only considered as *emblems* of the different attributes of the Deity, and not as deities, or objects of adoration, in themselves.

Of all denominations of men I have seen, I think there are none so chastely

\* Gentoo priests, followers of Bramah, their celebrated founder.

correct, in the discharge of religious and moral duties, as the Gentoos. This is pretty obvious on a general view of them: many instances came to my knowledge; and my faithful Punnapa, who served me from the first week I landed to the last minute of my stay, would have sacrificed his life sooner than have imposed on me himself, or suffered any one, European or native, to impose upon or injure his master in any respect. So far I speak to *his* moral character; and, being of a high Bramin cast, he would rather have lost his life than his cast, by acting contrary to any religious point of duty. Yet, among the lower casts of these, as well as the lower order of other people, there are those who will attempt to impose and practise on one's credulity. I will relate an instance that occurs to my memory.

I was travelling with a party of officers and a guard of Sepoys. We stopped to refresh ourselves; and, among the inhabitants of a village, who came out to view us as objects of curiosity, one fellow was so unusually audacious as to force himself



into the tent where we were dining, using strange gestures and making an extravagant noise. Having in vain endeavoured to learn his meaning, we ordered him out; he refused to go, and we then ordered the palanquin-bearers in attendance to force him out. On his being thus removed to a short distance from our tent, we soon heard a confused noise and lamentation, and we were informed that this fellow, who pretended to be a devotee, had swooned away from the effect of pollution, in being touched by our palanquin-bearers, who were Parriars\*.

We rather laughed at this account: louder lamentations were heard, and word was brought that the man was dead. We went out and found a great many people assembled round the body, lamenting and complaining loudly of the outrage. It became necessary to order our Sepoys under arms, and the servants to be on their guard. We sent for the head men of the village, and the body was thoroughly ex-

\* Men of the lowest cast.

amined by the natives and pronounced to be dead. There certainly appeared no visible signs of life ; but the trifling injury he could have received by the handling to overcome merely his own resistance, and the absurdity of a man's dying from the effect of fancied pollution, added to my experience of their powers of deception, perfectly satisfied my mind that this fellow was an impostor.

Desiring my brother-officers to leave the business to my management, I acquainted the natives that I had an infallible means of knowing whether the man was dead or not ; that, if there was the least spark of life remaining, since the body had received no injury, I could restore him, though the remedy would be exceedingly severe. They wanted to remove him ; but this I would not suffer, well knowing they might make any report they pleased concerning his death, and create much trouble.

I laid hold of his hand, and was some time before I could feel a pulse, which completely satisfied me ; but I kept my



own counsel. Again the people pressed forward tumultuously, with an apparent design to carry the body away by force; but, ordering the Sepoys to advance with fixed bayonets, I made them retire to a distance, suffering only the head men to remain. In vain did I endeavour to persuade them that the man counterfeited; until, finding nothing else would do, I assured them I possessed powers they had no conception of, and, without touching the body again, I would convince them of the man being still alive, by drawing a flame from his body, which they should see, and which would continue burning and consuming him, unless he arose from the earth. My brother-officers listened with nearly as much attention as the natives.

I sent my Dubash, Punnapa, to enjoin silence to the multitude, as a miracle was going to be performed by a European Bramin, which he assured them I was, (knowing I had officiated as a chaplain.)

Ordering my travelling escrutoir to be brought, I placed it near the man's head,

and took from it a wax taper, a small match, and a little bottle; articles I carried for the convenience of getting a light when wanted: I also took out a bit of sealing-wax, wrapped within a piece of white paper. I then directed all to be silent while the ceremony was performing, under pain of their being struck with death. Having had this explained by Punnapa to the chiefs, and by them again to the people, I was well satisfied the dead man heard and understood the whole, by slight involuntary twitchings I saw in his muscles.

When all was quiet, I began by walking slowly round the extended body four times, laying one of the four articles each time at his feet; uttering, with a solemn loud voice, the following five Latin words that happened to occur. “*Omne bene, non sine pæna.*” I believe that the fall of a pin might have been heard while I was performing this mummary.

Having managed with tolerable seriousness, I took up all the articles, stood across the man, and, raising both my arms as high as I could reach, called aloud, “*Si-tence!*”



Then, bending over the body, I held the match in my right hand, the wax taper in my left; and, drawing the cork from the bottle of phosphorus, just above his navel, at the moment I applied the match to light it, as it were, from his body, I began to sing, "God save great George, our king." But, the instant the flame was seen, there was such a yell of "Ah, paw, swaamee; ah, yaw, swaamee," as completely drowned all my fine singing. Lighting my taper, I proceeded with my work, by melting the sealing-wax, and dropping it hot, close above his navel; but the fellow had not patience to stay for more than two or three good drops of my miraculous wax, before he jumped up and ran away, bellowing and clawing his belly, without stopping to thank me for his cure or answering the calls of others, until he got within the village.

That the fellow had heard and understood what passed, with my declaration that I possessed a power to draw forth a flame from his body, was evident; and I depended on the sudden attack of the burning wax, on so tender a part, heightened

by his own imagination, to overthrow all the obstinacy of trick and produce some such effect as would satisfy he was not dead. What his particular aim was, it might be difficult to find out.

---

## CHAPTER XLIII.

*Decline settling at Madras as a lawyer; embark on board a country ship for the Island of Sumatra; water-spouts.*

HAVING related such anecdotes as occurred in India, some of which may amuse and some may possibly instruct, I return to the narrative more immediately concerning my own history.

I have already mentioned that it was my intention to cross over from Madras to the west coast of Sumatra, for the better convenience of a passage to England. So far as making a fortune may be reckoned pro-



ductive of greater happiness, I am persuaded I might have done infinitely better if I had suffered myself to be persuaded by a gentleman who had quitted the army a few years before, on account of a constitution too feeble to contend with an active military life; and, since that time, had practised as a lawyer in the courts of Madras: in which profession, though no more brought up or qualified for it than myself, he was making money rapidly. He very earnestly solicited me to join him in partnership; but, my disposition not leading me that way, I declined the liberal offer.

A country ship, belonging to Bombay, was then lying in the roads, bound to Acheen, the northernmost end of the Island of Sumatra; and in this ship I took my passage for Bencoolen. Captain P——, who commanded her, assured me, that, though he proposed trading all along the coast, as circumstances might encourage, in the Malay as well as the English and Dutch ports, yet he had no doubt of arriving at Bencoolen some months before

the East-India ship I meant to take my passage home in, would be loaded and ready to sail for England; adding, that he should not only be glad of my company, but he could explain, upon the passage, how materially it might serve him, and at the same time be exceedingly pleasant to myself. The last person I parted from, on embarking, was my faithful Punnapa: the poor fellow threw himself at my feet, and bathed them with tears of sincere attachment.

In crossing the Bay of Bengal, I saw more water-spouts than I had seen in all my preceding voyages. One morning, about sun-rise, the mate called me to view five in sight at the same time, in different points of bearing and various distances from us. It was a perfect calm, and a beautiful morning.

While we were making remarks upon them, and comparing their different appearances, our attention was suddenly called by a loud hissing noise; and, turning about, we observed the sea on our larboard-bow in a strange commotion, bub-



bling and rising up in hundreds of little sharp pyramidical forms, to various heights, alternately falling and rising within an apparent circle, whose diameter might be about sixty feet.

It was soon evident that another water-spout was beginning to form, in a critical situation for us, not being half the ship's length off. All was alarm and confusion: Captain P—— was soon upon deck, but neither he nor any other on board knew from experience what was best to be done. It was nearly impossible to withdraw the eye from this object: the sea, within the circle of its influence, boiled up with increasing rage and height, whirling round with great velocity and an indescribable hissing kind of noise. At times, the water was thus raised nearly as high as the foreyard: then sinking, as from some impediment or obstruction, and again commencing as before.

We had all heard of firing guns at water-spouts, and directions were given accordingly; yet, though we had several loaded, not one was found in condition; they only

burned priming. Orders were then given to load a fresh gun; but, excepting the mate, it was difficult to get any one to move, so rivetted and fixed with gaping astonishment were all the Lascars and people on board. While the mate was busy after the carriage-gun, Captain P—— and I concluded it would be right to try the effect of making a slight concussion in the air, by getting all the people to exert their lungs by loud cheers. God only knows whether this did really produce any good effect, but we fancied so. I had a lighted match in readiness; and, when the mate had loaded and primed the gun, I fired it, and two or three salutes caused the whole to subside. The ship was not in the least affected the whole time, except by the undulating swell when the water fell down again; yet, from the whirlwind kind of hissing, we were in momentary expectation of seeing the yards and masts torn to atoms and whirled into the air, and doubtful whether the whole of the ship might not soon be engulfed in the vortex.

It has ever remained a doubt with me,




whether the proximity of the ship, at the commencement of the water-spout's formation, did not alone check and prevent its rising and composing one of those tremendous columns of water, reaching from the sea to the clouds. I do not pretend to account for the causes which produce these sea-phenomena. I am content to relate simple matter of fact, leaving the explanation to the more studious and enlightened.

---

## CHAPTER XLIV.

*Arrive at Acheen ; introduced to the sultan ; large cannon half sunk in the earth, evidence of greater strength formerly ; an enormous gun over the gateway of the palace.*



AT Acheen, and all the Malay ports along the coast of Sumatra, I found an order of men distinct from any I had ever met with before. Compared with the inhabitants of India proper, across the Bay,

they appeared completely savage, ferocious, and exceedingly sanguinary in all their punishments. I had an opportunity of examining them attentively, from a novel kind of introduction by Captain P——, which, as he had hinted at Madras, would serve his interests, and occasion me a pleasant reception from the Malay chiefs. To this end, he had Sepoy uniforms made for some of the Lascars belonging to the ship, who were to appear as my body-guard as often as required.

On Captain P——'s going on shore at Acheen, he waited upon the sultan's agent for regulations of the port; acquainting him, a British officer was on board the ship, who, from a strong desire to pay his respects to the Great Sultan of Acheen, before he returned to England, had crossed the bay for such purpose, but would not land until assured of a reception suitable to the dignity of the great monarch he served. This compliment was well suited to the meridian of Acheen.

By the sultan's orders, a boat, or rather a barge, was sent off to the ship; in which



boat were the agent and several officers of his court, who invited me, in the sultan's name, to grace his palace. The ship's guns saluted them as they came on board; saluted me on leaving the ship, attended by my guard; and, on approaching the shore, we were so closely saluted by guns of an enormous calibre, that we would gladly have excused the compliment of being fired at so near our heads. On landing, I was met by an Indian Portuguese, a resident merchant, who spoke English fluently: he was to act as interpreter. Other officers of the court were with him, to receive and attend me to the palace; on entering which, the guns of the palace fired another salute, which was repeated by the guns on a battery and by the ship.

The ceremonies of introduction to princes of the East were grown familiar to me, and I plainly observed that my regimental uniform was a novel attraction to the sultan and all his court. I was most graciously received, and acknowledge I rather exceeded the truth when repeating what Captain P—— had advanced, respecting

my desire to see so great a sultan before I left India ; and I believe the little that I did say was considerably enlarged upon by the Portuguese merchant, who, I understood afterwards, was as much interested in my favourable reception as Captain P——; for, without permission from the sultan, no ship was allowed to trade, and was frequently refused until considerable presents were made: all which was smoothed down, and the permission obtained, through my means.

Within a week, Captain P—— was enabled to disposed of such part of his cargo as suited the Malay market, (opium and blue long-cloths in exchange for gold-dust, &c.) to great advantage to himself and the Portuguese merchant, who acted as his factor. During this, my time was partly occupied in rambling about, having three Malay attendants to escort, and shew me where I liked ; and partly by attending to the sultan, who invited me every day to a short conference, and to chew chenam and beetle-nut with him. Our conversations were not very edifying, conducted through



the medium of an interpreter, and consisting of short questions and answers, more of curiosity than any thing else. However, my time altogether passed pleasantly, having a table well supplied by direction of the Portuguese, with female slaves to attend.

From the number of large cannon I observed in my rambles and rides, (most of them half sunk in the earth from lying there so long,) it was evident that Acheen had been a place of greater note formerly, and much better fortified; yet the ignorance of the inhabitants respecting these guns was astonishing. That they were of European manufacture I have no doubt, though the Malays would not allow this, notwithstanding they could give no account how or when they were brought. But, as a proof of their capability of performing greater things, they pointed to an enormous large cannon, placed on high over the great gate-way at the entrance to the palace; a cannon, which I believe no European would claim the manufacturing of. It was big enough for a stout man to go into with

ease; very coarse and clumsy, both inside and out; and there were a few stone balls lying near, very suitable in appearance to the piece of ordnance they were made for. This, as I understood, was only to be discharged when an enemy approached in front of the gate: it had never yet been fired; and, to say the truth, I would rather have been the object fired at than the person to fire it.

---

## CHAPTER XLV.

*Malay punishments; precautions necessary to guard against surprise from Malay pirates; running a muck; jealousy and savage revenge; singular ordeal of Malays accused of adultery.*

IN my first walks about Acheen, particularly in the buzar, or market-place, I was surprised to see so many cripples, some without hands and feet; many with



the loss of either one hand or one foot ; and others with the loss of two. On inquiry, I found they were all culprits, punished, according to the enormity of the offence which they had committed, by the cutting, or rather chopping, off a hand or foot. Some of them, by a repetition of offences, had been so often punished as to have neither hand nor foot left, and thus far were rendered nearly incapable of committing farther offences. But the most extraordinary circumstance, as it appeared to me, was the account I received of their mode of treating the stump of the leg, after the foot was literally chopped off by an instrument, at one stroke, a little above the ankle. A bamboo cane was prepared, ready suited to the size and length of the culprit's leg ; the hollow of which cane was nearly filled with heated dammer\*. The instant the punishment was inflicted, by lopping off the limb, the bleeding stump was thrust into this heated resin within

\* A resinous kind of substance, something like pitch, but apparently of a harder nature and not so ready to melt.

the bamboo, which, as it cooled, became fixed ; and thus, if the victim to the law lived, he was provided with an excellent bamboo jury-leg, to stump about on. Many, I have no doubt, died ; but of that the Malays were very indifferent.

After leaving Acheen, we touched at other Malay ports along the coast. Those, that were in subjection to the Sultan of Acheen, received and traded with Captain P—— very readily. I was considered as the great man, and accordingly treated with great respect.

At other Malay ports, independant of Acheen, and some of them said to be at war with the sultan, Captain P—— was not only refused permission to traffic, but we were obliged to keep a strong guard on deck, day and night, to prevent being taken by surprise. We, therefore, never allowed more than one Malay boat, at a time, to be along side the ship ; and even to the few that came on board, six or eight at a time, it was deemed necessary to shew we were well armed. Every free Malay man wears his creese constantly in the



sash, or girdle, round his waist; and many ships have been cut off and every soul murdered by these blood-thirsty savages, after coming on board as friends to trade, &c. when they have found the people of the ship negligent and off their guard.

There is no doubt of the Malays practising that most singular and barbarous custom of running a muck; but, as I saw no instance myself, and there are accounts given by others who have, I shall briefly explain it, for the information of those who may not understand the term.

A Malay man, who abandons himself to despair from any cause, though it most commonly proceeds from the ruin attending his extreme propensity to gambling, takes opium until producing phrenzy; and then, with dishevelled hair, he draws his creese, and, running along, stabs and destroys all he meets, until he is destroyed himself.

The Malays are savagely jealous, and revenge themselves by assassinating the party they suspect, even without proof; but, on actual detection, the injured Ma-

lay kills both the man and woman if he can. The woman is sure to fall a sacrifice; and, should the man escape at the time, being accused thereof and suspected to be guilty, he has to go through an ordeal from which few escape with life.

He is taken to a large open spot, where every Malay in the neighbourhood, who wears a creese, attends. A ring is formed, according to the number assembled, and the delinquent is placed in the centre. If he can make his way through these surrounding opponents, all armed with their creeses, and then, by flight, can reach a certain tree as his sanctuary, he is deemed innocent and escapes. If he makes no attempt to escape, the circle is drawn in closer and nearer, until one or more stab him with their creeses. His best chance, therefore, is to start off at first, before the ranks thicken by the drawing in of the circle. I saw nothing of this ceremony, but was shewn a tree said to be one of these sanctuaries. I understood likewise,




that there was pretty frequent cause for jealousy, notwithstanding the threatened penalties.

---

## CHAPTER XLVI.

*Ayerbungy, Padang, Tappanooly : mountaineer-aborigines, their reputed cannibalism accounted for : decline their invitation to accompany them to their mountains : their report of an Englishman then residing with them.*



SUMATRA has a length of coast of more than one thousand miles ; there are, consequently, a variety of ports, many of which belong to the native Malays, some to the Dutch, and some to the English.

We touched at Ayerbungy and Padang, two Dutch settlements, where we were treated with civility, and I believe Captain P—— did some business ; but, as my assistance was not required, and the Dutch

love to transact matters in a close snug way, I made no inquiry and heard nothing about it.

We stopped some time at Tappanooly, where I had the pleasure of meeting Governor Herbert, and part of his suite: he was then on his way to Madras, previously to undertaking the establishment of a settlement at Balambangan. At Tappanooly, which is one of the out-settlements belonging to Bencoolen, I reckoned myself rather fortunate in meeting with three of the mountaineer-aborigines of the island, reputed to be cannibals. Great attention was paid these men by the resident at Tappanooly and by Governor Herbert. They are very different from the Malay natives on the coast; and, from what I could learn, were driven from the sea-coast, some centuries back, by the Malays; when, retiring to some extraordinary fastnesses in the mountains, they have maintained a complete independence ever since. Nor could I hear of more than two Europeans that had ever ventured or been admitted among them; the one a Mr. Miller,



a botanist, who concerned himself about nothing else; and the other proved afterwards to be an old acquaintance, whom I have already mentioned and shall soon have occasion to introduce again.

I attached myself almost as strongly to these men, and from similar inquisitive motives, as I had formerly to the American savages; and they appeared to be as much pleased with my attention. They usually dined with us at the resident's table, and partook of every thing with infinitely more ease than I expected. The discourse, one day after dinner, relating to a peace lately made between these mountaineer-aborigines and the Malays on the coast, some questions were asked them concerning it. This affording me an opportunity I had long wished for, I boldly put the question, whether or no there was any truth in the reports concerning their eating human flesh. Governor Herbert, the resident, and other Europeans present, sat all aghast at what they deemed my temerity, and acknowledged afterwards they were

fearful of some serious consequence. But, instead of being offended, the head man of the three, with a smiling countenance, as if complimented by the question, readily answered, that, when they slew an enemy in battle, it was customary to cut him up, and for the warriors, especially the young men, to take a piece of the flesh and champ it with their teeth, smearing their face and arms with the blood, in token of triumph as well as to increase their courage; and that some would swallow it, but it was never eaten as food.

I acknowledge that this is a savage detestable custom, and lament it; but it does not answer my idea of cannibalism, or man-eating. In truth, I do not believe there are any such people existing, who delight in eating human flesh as food. Necessity has often driven Christians to eat the flesh of their fellow creatures, and so it may occur to savages: their passion for revenge, likewise, as the ferocious custom just related of increasing courage by such daring, may have induced the world to believe such savages to be canni-



bals in the strict sense of the word; but, with all the inquiry I have been able to make, I could never find sufficient authority to induce me to credit it.

My friendly mountaineers invited me to go up with them to their country, assuring me of perfect safety; and that, if I did not like to stay with them, I might return in about four months, when they purposed being again at Tappanooly; but that they thought I should find the mountains where they lived, above the clouds, so much preferable to the lower earth, that I might incline to live entirely there. In proof of which, they said that one Englishman had been with them several months, and was so satisfied that he had no wish to accompany them down when they came away, but desired them to bring him an Englishman for a companion.

This was rather a drawback on my vanity, having given myself exclusive credit for their seeming partiality, which I now found was to be divided with another. Had I been as capable of exertion as when I accepted a similar kind of invitation in

America, I should most readily have acceded, and been well pleased with the probability of meeting a countryman. I regretted it was not in my power, and declined the offer. I think it was the resident who inquired if they had learned the name of this Englishman: it sounded much like my old friend B——, who is spoke of in my first voyage, &c.; but, from their pronunciation, it was difficult to ascertain. On my pronouncing it, they all nodded their heads, declaring it to be the same: it was not a common name, yet there might be others. I could no way account for his being there, yet his eccentricities made it not very unlikely.

As they intended returning soon, I wrote a short note, mentioning the cause of my quitting India; and, should the person prove to be my old friend, how much it would rejoice me to meet him at Fort Marlborough, where I was proceeding in order to take my passage to England, in a ship which I then understood was not likely to sail for months.



## CHAPTER XLVII.

*Moco-Moco ; visit the old sultan ; arrive at Bencoolen ; hospitality of the settlement ; scarcity of culinary vegetables where vegetation is so strong ; fire produced by bamboo-friction ; grass too strong for horses to penetrate, its fierce burning.*



FROM Tappanooly, we sailed for Moco-Moco ; a place which, for excessive heat, sailors declare to be within a sheet or two of paper from hell. I did not experience any such extraordinary hot weather the few days we stopped. We paid a short visit of ceremony to the old sultan, who in return asked us to chew beetle-nut with him.

On our arrival at Bencoolen, I waited on the governor, commanding-officer, &c. ; and was most hospitably received and entertained, all the time I remained there, by the gentlemen of that settlement. Unfortunately, the ship that was bound to England was not expected to sail for seve-

ral months; but my time passed merrily and pleasantly, from continual invitations and various excursions into the country. One of the first things that surprized me, was the scarcity of culinary vegetables where vegetation was the most rapid I ever noticed; of which I will relate one instance.

A gentleman of the settlement, intending to build himself a country-house, requested my accompanying him to choose a spot. Having rode a few miles south from the fort, we wished to reach an elevated spot on our right, which we conceived would afford us a prospect of the sea. There was nothing but grass to obstruct our riding up a gentle acclivity, to the top of this hill; but we made the attempt in vain. Our horses could not possibly proceed farther than a few roods through the grass, owing to a strong entanglement below of the dry withered part, through which, a very coarse strong grass shot up five or six feet high. Giving it up for that day, we returned the next with two stout negro-men; ordering them to penetrate and



get as far as possible up the hill, and then set fire to the grass. This they did, and their means of procuring fire may appear curious. Splitting a piece of dry bamboo-cane, they scrape the edges to make a kind of tinder with the fine scrapings; they put this into the hollow between the slit pieces, which are held or tied together. A notch is then cut nearly through one of these pieces, over the place where the tinder-scrapings are put: the edge of another piece of slit bamboo is applied to the notch, when, by the friction of the sawing backwards and forwards, fire is produced to light the tinder.

I confess I had no conception, before this, that grass would burn with such rapid fierceness as was here proved. It spread in a complete circle, and the loud snapping and crackling of the flames was similar to that which I had known from a fire at Cornhill, in London, when the four corners were all on fire at the same time. The two negroes had managed to get within the circle; and, from their running about to aid the flames where necessary, and

tossing the fire along, appeared like devils living within the flames. We left them to attend the fire and spread it so as to procure a path for us, the following day, to the top of the mount.

The extent of burnt grassy ground we could ride and look over, the ensuing day, was immense; the fire had burnt in every direction, as far as the grass extended, until stopped by the deep ravin-swamps with which the country abounds. The wild inhabitants, the buffalo, tiger, &c. in the neighbourhood of the fire, must have been considerably disturbed by the unusual conflagration. We were disappointed in our expected object, the prospect from the summit of the hill. But I was much gratified by the view of the rapidity with which the fire had caught the strong green grass, which must be ascribed to the thick matted bottom of dry grass, that had been gathering for ages.

Riding out that way within ten days after, I was still more surprised at the rapid vegetation which had succeeded the fire: the new grass had grown up as high



as the calf of my leg, stout and thick enough to mow. Yet, notwithstanding this rapid power of vegetation, vegetables were so scarce that gentlemen's tables were scantily supplied, and the ships' crews so destitute, that the scurvy raged dreadfully among the poor seamen.

---

## CHAPTER XLVIII.

*Earthquakes ; violent illness and rash cure ; habit of morning ablutions, and sitting al fresco in the hot land-winds ; a new cure for the itch.*



THE Island of Sumatra is much subject to earthquakes, productive, at times, of mischief and serious consequent changes, some of which, that had occurred within memory, were pointed out to my observation ; rivers changed in their course, &c. with others that exhibited evident marks of more antient convulsions. In general, however, the shocks were harmless, and

their frequent recurrence made them little thought of. An instance of this occurred soon after my landing at Bencoolen.

Some gentlemen were playing at trap-ball in the fort; I was sitting near as a spectator. An officer, who was preparing to strike, called out suddenly for us to attend, as we should soon have an earthquake. The attention of every one was instantly excited; and I was the only person doubtful of his being in earnest or not. Before I could inquire, the earth trembled under us, and I very distinctly felt a tremulous motion of my body. It passed away in a few seconds; and the officer, who had warned us of its approach, again called to those he was playing with, to look out, and with the most composed indifference went on with his game. Inquiring of this gentleman, afterwards, how he came by his previous knowledge of what was to happen, he said, that, looking out to what quarter he had best strike the ball, he observed some fowls, belonging to the fort, running wildly about and screaming, a circumstance which most in the settle-



ment knew to be a pretty sure indication of an approaching earthquake. It may be readily supposed that fowls and various animals, moving so close to the earth, and susceptible of very acute nervous sensations, might quickly be sensible of the motion, but the impression of fear cannot be so easily accounted for.

My stay at Bencoolen was prolonged to nearly ten months, in which time, the number of deaths became alarming, even to those who had been long accustomed to see the ravaging effects of so unhealthy a climate. I had been more than six months without the slightest illness, though I lived freely, being in much company, and continued a custom I was much blamed for by the medical and other gentlemen of the settlement: this was, as soon as I rose from my cot in the morning, to go out into the air and have two or three large earthen jars of water poured over my head.

One morning, finding myself exceedingly out of order two or three hours earlier than my usual time of rising, I was soon sensible, from the excessive burning heat

all over me, that one of the same destructive fevers had seized me which had so rapidly carried off many of the inhabitants. I had noticed the ill success of their medical treatment, and had resolved, in case of an attack, to be my own doctor as long as it was in my power; and I had directed my servant, who came with me from Madras, accordingly. I consulted my own sensations as to what I felt desirous of being done, and my predominant wish was, that I could roll myself in snow, as I had seen the American Indians. My head, in particular, was like a ball of fire; and I apprehended approaching distraction, so as to disable me from giving sound directions. Calling my servant, therefore, who lay in an adjoining passage, I ordered him to throw a handful or two of saltpetre into three earthen jars of water, and stir it as was usual for cooling our wine. As soon as this was ready, I went out and made him pour the liquor from the three jars successively over my head. I felt instant relief, and, wrapping a quilted soosee morning-gown about me, lay down again,



directing my servant to cover me with other clothes in the hope of getting into a perspiration, but without effect.

My stomach and bowels now seemed much oppressed, as if wanting relief. I was always provided with ippecacuana, jalap, rhubarb, and salts, made up in doses : directing my servant to take two of the former, and mix ready for taking, I swallowed this double dose ; and, while I laid down again, ordered, with other necessary matters, some very weak tamarind tea to be prepared. I suffered much before the medicine took effect, at length it operated with violence, nearly approaching to suffocation, nor was it long before the evacuations were general, and extreme ; strong as I deemed myself, I found my strength exhausting fast, so that I was obliged at last to order my servant, Peter, to support me : how long I continued thus, I cannot say ; but it appeared a grievous length of time. When the reaching ceased, I drank a little mulled wine and water, well cinnamoned, but had not sufficient strength left to rise and get into my cot

without help. Weak and exhausted as I was when I lay down, I felt comparative ease; and, after a while, taking a little more mulled wine, I sunk gradually into a sound sleep.

To make short of my story, I recovered speedily, in defiance of Doctors M'C—— and M——, who, as soon as the circumstances were known from my servant, while I continued sleeping, declared I had killed myself beyond all possibility of recovery.

I cannot defend the rashness of my proceeding, nor do I wish to recommend its adoption by others, unless, like myself in the instance mentioned, they should be fearful of trusting to the judgement of the professional men about them, from observations of the fatality of their practice in similar cases. The patients, under the care of the doctors of the settlement, suffered in a most cruel manner, while scarcely any recovered; and, considering it as a forlorn hope, I should have preferred, to their treatment, almost any other mode that could have been recommended to



me, even from a Malay doctor or Malay nurse.

For several years I had been in the constant habit of having large Cudjaree-pots of water thrown over me in a morning: and hundreds of times, during the violence of the hot land-winds on the coast of Coromandel, when retired from company after dinner, finding it impossible to repose on account of the heat, I have seated myself on a camp-stool, in the most likely situation to feel an air of wind in the shade; and, with nothing on but a banyan shirt and long drawers, have placed a towel soaked in water upon my head, keeping a second in a pot of cool water, close to my side, ready to place on my head as the former one ceased draining; and in this situation have I continued for an hour or two, comfortably reading a book.

In the evenings, on the parade, and in company, while all were complaining of lassitude and weariness, I felt refreshed and strong. Nor did I ever hesitate to perform these morning or afternoon ablutions, although I might have previously

sacrificed a little freely to Bacchus. To such constant bathings, and still more frequent minor ablutions, I attributed my escape from fevers, when numbers around me severely suffered. And this, in some degree, may account for the ready adoption of what my sensations so strongly suggested.

Another safe cure now occurs to me, which should have been noticed in its place. On the passage from Madras to Acheen, I found that, by some means or other, I had caught a most terrible itch. For some days I was almost distracted, having nothing whatever on board to apply as a cure. The disorder increasing rapidly into large blotches, it was impossible to refrain from rubbing and scratching, by which the smart became intolerable.

I had been favoured with this disorder once before, in London, where I soon procured relief; but my London itch was a flea-bite compared to this. There was not an ounce of sulphur on board the vessel, to apply as a remedy; but it occurred, at



last, that what cured the mange in a dog might be efficacious in curing the itch. Making a strong tobacco water, therefore, I stripped, and with cloths washed myself all over with it, except my eyes, the pit of my stomach, and such other parts as are deemed dangerous to apply so strong a wash to. I performed this operation thrice a-day, was tolerably easy after the first, and on the fourth or fifth day was quite well.

This, therefore, as a remedy for a most disagreeable complaint, I can and do recommend to those, who, being in a similar situation, may not be able to apply for a milder treatment. I conceive it likewise to be an excellent preventive, by washing the hands in it when the complaint is about in families, schools, &c. and besides, a less offensive application than brimstone.

## CHAPTER XLIX.

*Wild elephants and buffalos ; an unexpected meeting ; intelligence of Lieutenant Dugdale burning the Turkish fleet ; a short account of my old shipmate's adventures.*



I BELIEVE it may be truly said, that the Settlement of Bencoolen, or Fort Marlborough, in point of unhealthiness of climate and comparative advantages to the civil and military services, is the worst in India ; yet, in point of hospitality to strangers, no part of India can exceed it. I was for ever engaged to one party or another at the Presidency or up the country, and look back with wonder at the good state of my health.

In some of these excursions to the interior parts of the island, I had opportunities of seeing the wild elephant and wild buffalo, neither of which did I see, in a wild state, in India proper. One day, while at dinner at a gentleman's country-



box, a herd of more than twenty of the wild elephants came full in view, moving slowly along, one after the other. As the headmost elephant was entering a wood, two or three of our party took up muskets, loaded with ball, and fired at them. We were at too great a distance to injure them much; and, either from the report, or from some of them being struck, they instantly rushed forward into the wood with great impetuosity, and were soon out of sight; but the crackling noise of the trees and boughs, borne down by their strength and weight, was remarkably loud. I was told that the wild buffalo was by far the most dangerous animal to meet with in the island; the two or three that I saw appeared more alarmed at us, than my friend Jesse (with whom I was riding) and myself were at them.

The time fast approached for the ship's sailing, when a Malay boat came in from the northward, with some shipwrecked people they had picked up from a wreck; I accompanied some gentlemen down to the water-side, where they were then land-

ing. One of our party stepped forward, from eager curiosity, to learn the particulars. He soon came back, saying there was a strange looking sailor-like Malay, that spoke English, and inquired after me by name, to know if I was at Bencoolen. Before I could well express my surprize who such a person could be, the same man, with a wildness in his countenance, expressive of distress overcome by joy, ran hastily up, and, seizing one of my hands with both his, exclaimed, in good English, “ Damme, my boy! but I am glad to find you.” My companions were all amazement: the few garments he had on, turban and all, were not worth a beggar’s picking up: but my heart warmed the instant I heard his voice; and, pressing him to my breast, I welcomed my old early friend and shipmate B—— with tears of affection.

Excusing myself to the company, without explanation, I hurried him away to my quarters, and it would be a vain attempt to convey an idea of our mutual feelings and repeat our conversations that



evening. We went to bed late and got up early : Peter assisted in scrubbing and cleaning him, while I overhauled my wardrobe to select things that would best fit him. Of the three, I think I enjoyed the most solid satisfaction ; yet I am conscious I looked more serious and sedate than either. My friend did nothing but laugh and make whimsical remarks on his own figure, while Peter's countenance plainly indicated unsatisfied curiosity, and in this state we sate down to breakfast.

Not long after, I had a complete levee of friends, to whom I introduced my old shipmate. He was invited and treated with tender hospitality by all my acquaintance ; and, soon recruiting his strength, got rid of his way-worn countenance. During the remainder of our stay, he was much caressed for his own sake, though by many he was deemed a rattling fellow. I endeavoured to persuade him to go home as a passenger, but this he refused, as Captain Richardson, with whom I had engaged my passage,

was in want of officers, and he preferred engaging as such with him.

After several years absence, without knowing or hearing what had befallen each other, we had much to communicate. I learned from my friend many particulars of the success of my relation, Lieutenant Dugdale, whom he had accompanied on-board the Russian Fleet, at the time I left England for India. Lieut. Dugdale volunteered the desperate service, of setting fire to the Turkish fleet, in the Isle of Scio ; and, leading the three fire ships in among the Turkish fleet lying at anchor there, through a tremendous discharge of great and small arms from the shore as well as the ships, he was severely wounded by a hand-grenade, thrown from the ship he had grappled with. A sixty-gun ship was the only one that escaped the flames ; the command of which, Count Orlov, the Russian admiral, gave to Dugdale upon his recovery ; he was afterwards farther promoted, and died an admiral in the Russian service.

My friend B—— acknowledged he had refused to accompany my relation on this



forlorn hope, ever after which a coolness subsisted between them ; and, having no other attachment to the service, he quitted it. On his return, finding his relations at home as obstinate as himself, he accepted a mate's berth on board an East-India ship, bound to China: but, quarrelling with the captain while at Canton, he left the ship and went on board a country-ship, belonging to Bombay, which was wrecked on the east-coast of Sumatra, where the captain and most of the crew perished. Among the survivors were two Malays, to whose friendship, after they landed, he owed his own preservation.

Several months elapsed without an opportunity of getting away to any European settlement ; and, having no one to converse with in English, he soon learned the Malay language. Some of the mountaineers, going down to the coast to traffic, on learning that he was an Englishman, invited him to go back with them ; assuring him, that he should be at liberty to leave their mountains whenever he pleased, and might have better opportunities of

descending to some of the European settlements on the western coast.

He accepted the offer, and accompanied them through such difficult defiles and passes, as, but for their assistance, it would not have been in his power to accomplish. His heart frequently sunk within him, but it was too late to repent; and the cheerfulness of his companions revived his spirits, until his severe toil and labour were amply rewarded, he said, on arriving at their place of residence, where the surrounding scenery was most grand and beautiful, and the air pure and fresh.

The rest of my friend's account of these upper regions of the earth, and the manners, customs, and religion, of their aboriginal inhabitants\*, I must excuse myself from relating; for, although, from my knowledge of the narrator, I might credit him, others, possibly, would not be so ready to believe at second-hand.

That, from what he had undergone and suffered, together with his family differences,

\* Christians and Mahometans call them heathens!



he should entertain thoughts of continuing where he was, may not be difficult to believe. This, he said, he had made his mind up to, when those mountaineers, whom I had met at Tappanooly, came down to the coast; and, but for the chance-note I sent, from my hearing a name so similar to his, he believed he should have settled there for life. However, the information in that note, that it was probable to find me at Bencoolen, wrought so complete a change in his mind, that he grew uneasy until another opportunity offered of descending to the coast: it was to a Malay port; he had not an article of European clothing left; and, in truth, he was better without, as he was less subject to molestation. Necessity compelled him to ship himself, as a common sailor, on board a Malay prow, for the chance of her touching at an English settlement as she sailed along the coast. This vessel was wrecked on a reef of rocks, but the people were saved by another Malay prow, that brought them into Bencoolen; when, as related, I met my old friend.

## CHAPTER L.

*Passage from Sumatra to the Cape of Good Hope ; destructive effects of the sea-scurvy ; a white squall off the Cape ; sickly and weak state of our ship's crew ; their rapid recovery by drinking new wine.*



THE ship I took my passage in for England had been so long upon the coast, that many of the sailors, from a total want of vegetables with but little fresh meat, and even that coarse buffalo beef, were ill with the sea-scurvy. Our passage to the Cape of Good Hope being very tedious, we buried more than one-third of the ship's company, who sunk under this melancholy disorder. It was not at all uncommon for men, who appeared stout and hearty the day previous to their complaining to the doctor, to droop so quickly in their strength and spirits, that, within two or three days, they were incapable of doing the smallest duty ; with-



out pain, (except what proceeded from feebleness,) without fever, without appetite, and without power to move, more than just to creep from their hammocks to the doctor's birth, requesting that aid which he had not to give.

In this dismal gloomy situation, scarcely a day past, for the last three weeks we were at sea, but we had to bury one or more of them; some mornings, three at a time. For more than a week before the ship got to the Cape, the whole of the ship's crew, before the mast, were not able to eat one large saucepan of fresh pork and fowls, cooked for them as savourily as possible.

In this situation as to strength, with a leaky ship, becalmed in sight of the Cape, and within soundings, I was trying one forenoon, with hooks and lines, to catch fish. A Dutch India ship was in sight, about seven miles to the southward of us: while the captain and officers of our ship were taking their observations, looking round the horizon at the perfect glassy smoothness of the sea, I observed the Dutch ship in a strange position, apparently down

on her beam-ends, which I noticed to Captain Richardson.

It continued a dead calm with us, nor was there the smallest appearance of any approach of wind. Captain Richardson, looking at the Dutch ship with his glass, swore he could not make out what was the matter with her, whether she had carried her masts away or was overset. Then, looking at me in a cross though arch manner, he said, "I believe you have been calling the devil to your aid, to conjure up one of those white squalls you were amusing us with an account of the other day."

At this time, and for some hours before, the ship's courses were hauled up, the topgallant-sails lowered on the caps, the top-sails hanging to the masts, (the ship having neither wind nor motion,) and the staysails down. Every eye was looking earnestly at the Dutch ship, without discovering any cause for her continued strange commotion. Captain Richardson ordered some hands up to furl the topgallant sails, and then ordered the top-sails to be lower-



ed and a reef taken in. The men were going aloft, and some were actually on the yards, when so sudden and violent a squall came on as to lay the ship nearly on her broadside. The first effect was violent, increasing every second of time, and in less than two minutes it blew a perfect hurricane. The few men on the yards fortunately got off again, and all hands were ordered down for their safety. In less than ten minutes, every loose sail in the ship, except the fore-sail, was blown clear away from the yards. Had the top-sails remained up, her masts must have been carried away or she must have overset; the latter most likely, as she was very crank, owing to the great quantity of arrack which Captain Richardson had taken on board for his private venture, to sell at the Cape and St. Helena, and which, being stowed between decks, made her very top-heavy. Had it not been for the imminent danger we were thus thrown into, the rending, tearing, snapping, and blowing away, of the sails, in a variety of shapes and sizes, in so short a time, would have been enter-

taining enough to an unconcerned spectator.

Though at a considerable distance from the land, we were on a lee-shore, and it was very fortunate that the fore-sail, (though split in getting the tack down,) being a strong new sail, enabled us to haul the wind sufficiently to clear the land. Other requisite sails were soon bent, and the squall terminated in a strong gale, which lasted some days; but our main bustle was over in two hours.

When the ship was a little in trim again, we sat down to dinner. Our captain looked very sulky: I guessed the reason, for it had happened, three or four days before this occurred, that the captain had been disputing with me on the subject of white squalls. He maintained, that any seriously-heavy squall of wind might be foreseen and guarded against, if those, who were on deck, kept a good look out. I related one that I had witnessed in a passage from Jamaica, by which we lost two top-masts and several hands that were aloft at the time. All this he had tried to banter away,



by swearing it was no more than an idle excuse for being taken by surprise, when there was not a proper look out; and this tickled his fancy so much, (being an old expert seaman,) that he had been rallying me about it every subsequent day until this happened.

Waiting my opportunity, therefore, after dinner was cleared away, I asked him “what he thought of a white squall?” This was more than he could parry with good humour: so favourite a subject had it been with him for the few days past, that he could not bear raillery upon it; and, after a fruitless attempt, he turned it off by declaring he believed I dealt with the devil, and was the wandering Jew, as I appeared to be better acquainted with all parts of the globe than himself, who, by the difference of our looks, was a seaman before I was born. This set us all in a roar of laughter, affording him an opportunity of working to windward of his chagrin. On recovering from my laughter, I said, “he never made a better hit in his life, and promised him my farther aid, without con-

juring up more white squalls, if he would shake hands, and drink a glass to our better acquaintance." During the remainder of our passage home, it was a standing joke for me to address him as my *protégée*, and he to call me *master*.

As I observed before, our ship's crew lessened daily by the sea-scurvy, so that, by their gradual decrease and the ship being leaky, passengers and all were obliged to lend their aid. Neither the captain nor any of the senior officers had ever been at the Cape; I, therefore, undertook to pilot the ship in: but we had not sufficient strength left to bring the ship to an anchor and moor her in safety, without aid from the shore, the last gale having proved fatal in destroying the feeble remains of life in many of the crew. Nay, so much was the aid of every person on board required to work the ship in and bend the cables, that the bodies of two men, who died in the preceding night, were left uninterred upon the poop, when the ship came to an anchor; and another poor fellow, who lay ill in his hammock, spoke to the gunner, (as he



passed along to fire a signal-gun for assistance,) rejoicing he was likely to get on shore soon. On the gunner's return, a few minutes after, he found him dead: the shock of the gun, fired so near him, was supposed to have driven away the feeble remnant of breath.

Between forty and fifty of the ship's crew were conveyed to the shore as soon as possible the same day, many of them incapable of walking. One only died after landing; he was a strong, Herculean-built, negro. The rapid convalescence of all the rest appeared like magic: within three days more than half these fellows were found drunk in the streets, taken up by order of the fiscal, imprisoned for the night, and next morning sent on board the ship. They had been directed to drink new wine medicinally, and this, with a superabundant supply of excellent vegetables, wrought wonders with them all. The heartiest soon got at more than the doctor's allowance; and that, which might have been highly injurious at other times, proved exceedingly beneficial in recovering

them from so dreadful a scourge as the sea-scurvy.

From the sufferings of the ship's company, their reduced numbers, as well as their state of debility, we remained some weeks at the Cape, for the purpose of recruiting; which were not spent idly by the other two passengers and myself.

---

## CHAPTER LI.

*Invited to live at the Cape; observations and suggestions relative to its improvement as an English colony.*

WE made frequent and long excursions into the country, travelling in a kind of waggon-coach, sometimes accompanied by our captain, and pretty frequently by the colonel-commandant, a German officer, who had seen much service under Prince Ferdinand of Brunswick. He used much persuasion towards Captain Marchant (a



brother-officer, who had lost a leg, and like myself, was going home to be invalided) and myself, to induce us to stay at the Cape, where it was much in his power to give such assistance as would make us all but independent. He was miserable, he said, for want of society; the Dutch officers, who were under his command, having neither education nor mind. Invalids as we were, we pitied his situation, being truly isolated from congenial society. He was a sensible pleasant gentleman, and much of the officer; but we declined his kind offers.

From the observations I had an opportunity of making, and information I received while at the Cape from intelligent inhabitants, and among others from an English gardener, who had been sent out and resided at the Cape for more than three years, by directions of his Majesty, to search for and collect new plants and seeds; from these sources, and the experience that other countries had given me, I considered myself warranted to suggest to government, at the time the Cape was

in our possession, reasons for keeping that possession which conquest had given ; and, as these suggestions are tolerably concise, and comprehend the description I should have given of the Cape of Good Hope when last there, it may not be thought much out of place to introduce them here.

The Cape of Good Hope, the southernmost promontory of Africa, lies nearly in 35 degrees of south latitude, extending between 400 and 500 miles east and west, and between 200 and 300 miles north and south. There were reckoned to be nearly 20,000 Europeans, or descendants from Europeans, while under the Dutch government, who possessed between 30,000 and 40,000 slaves, Africans and Asiatics. The number of native Hottentots is not easily ascertained : they appear a mild, docile, inoffensive people, easily induced to be useful in the management of cattle. They have been much misrepresented in Europe, and the accounts given of their customs and manners strangely exaggerated. Their persons, instead of being homely and disgusting as represented, are on the contrary



well shaped, and, for black people, more comely in countenance than the negro race. I speak of the Hottentots only, and not of the other black nations farther inland.

The Dutch government, instead of encouraging commercial improvements, have endeavoured to discountenance them as much as possible; and, from a narrow policy, have even prevented their own settlers from transporting articles coastwise, fearful that a true knowledge might be gained of the country and the bays, harbours, &c. along the coast. From what little we do know, however, of the excellent wines that are produced; their grain, vegetables, and fruits, of all kinds, inferior to none; with the profusion of many rich articles of commerce that it is capable of furnishing, such as aloes, succotra, myrtle, wax, salt, paints, indigo, cotton, tobacco, ivory, ostrich-feathers, seal-skins, and whale-oil; besides many other articles, that would afford a most extensive trade of raw materials with the guardian state, which would again reap the benefit

of exporting them to all parts of the world, when manufactured ;—there is good reason to believe, should the Cape be permanently settled as an English colony, and proper encouragement be given to it, that both the Cape and the territory belonging to it would soon prove most valuable acquisitions to this country. It may be termed the strong centre-link of a great commercial chain, proceeding first from England to the Cape, and uniting there with two others ; the one extending to the East Indies, China, &c. and the other to South America, the Pacific Ocean, &c.

To give a speedy increase of strength and value to the Cape, as an English settlement, encouragement should be given to British subjects to go thither and settle, so as to out-number the Dutch inhabitants and thereby give a *British ton* to the customs and manners of the country. To do this effectually and beneficially, I consider the whole territory of the Cape as belonging to Great Britain by right of conquest. The government of Great Britain has therefore a right (within the bounds



of justice and equity to prior settlers) to dispose of this territory in such manner as will best answer the most beneficial purposes to the mother-country, generally; and to the inhabitants, in particular, who are already settled there, (as well natives as others,) or who may hereafter settle there.

The government being most equitably entitled to a remuneration for past expenses on account of the nation, as well as for the present and future expense of protection, I conceive that some certain *ground-rent*, or *land-tax*, might be laid upon the whole of the land at present occupied and improved in any way, either by buildings, farming, or any other manner; the said ground-charge to be paid annually by the owner of such landed property. *All other lands*, within the territory of the Cape, having no legal owner accountable and capable of paying such a ground-charge, to be at the disposal of government, in the following manner.

*Every married man*, already settled at the Cape, or who, being a natural-born

subject of the British government, should go thither to settle, on making the necessary application and setting forth his claim, to be allowed . . . . acres of such government-land for himself and his wife, 'on condition of erecting some habitable house thereon and cultivating a certain portion of the land, within . . . . years, or forfeit such claim.

*Every single man*, capable of cultivating and improving the land, to be allowed one-half the above quantity, on the same conditions; and, on his marriage, to be entitled to the whole.

For *every acre of land*, so claimed and taken up, the owner or occupier to pay to government the sum of . . . . annually. This assessment to be at a very low rate.

*Every foreigner*, settling at the Cape, to be allowed one-half the quantity of land that is allowed, as before-mentioned, to those already settled there, or who are natural-born subjects of Great Britain; and subject to the same-regulations.

*Surveyors* to be appointed by government, to survey and allot such lands, who



would be guided by circumstances in allotting those that are adjoining to lands already occupied. But, in *new* districts, care should be taken that public roads are first laid out to as much advantage as the country will admit, in squares of four or six miles; and, supposing them to be *four*, the admeasurement of the farms to be so allotted, as to begin from the front next the public road and run one mile in depth only, but as much in front as the claimant is entitled to. The other side of the square being allotted in like manner, there will be an intermediate space, two miles in breadth, of unimproved land between those improved lots; which unimproved land will increase in value proportionably to the increased value of the cultivated lots.

These *uncultivated intermedial lands* might be hereafter *sold*, by order of government, when deemed useful, and would sell according to their increased value; yet always subject to a similar ground-charge, by the acre, with the adjoining farms already allotted and improved.

The *money* arising from the sale of such lands, to be laid out in public improvements, within the districts where the lands are situated.

The *money*, arising from all the ground-rents, to be considered as the revenue of the British Empire, with a per centage increase in their value every fifty years, as the value of money decreases.

No *new districts* to be allotted by the surveyors, without the concurrence of the Cape-government, who should take care that such districts were not too remote from those already improved; so that the strength of the settlement should be concentrated as much as possible.

Under the foregoing or other beneficial regulations, the settlement could not well do other than thrive; while the guardian state would share in all its advantages, besides the receipt of an increasing revenue from its ground-rents. This mode would apply to the formation of all settlements on new uncultivated lands; for, I have observed in the back lands of America, as well as elsewhere, that the greatest danger



as well as difficulty, to new settlers, arises from the irregular straggling distances of settlements from each other.

*Convicts*, from Great Britain, might be sent to the Cape at a comparatively trivial expence, and to greater advantage than sending them to Botany-bay. They might be employed at first on any public works, until they manifested such signs of contrition and good behaviour, as to merit permission to serve the remainder of their time as bonded servants, to some of the settlers, at certain wages, to be paid to government, agreed upon by proper officers, conditionally, that, if they misbehaved during such servitude, they would be liable to be brought back to the public works, there to expiate their offence; but, if they conducted themselves well, one moiety of the wages, agreed to be paid to government by their master or mistress, should be paid to them when their time expired; by which means, they would have both character and property to re-enter society with. Government should likewise allot . . . . acres of land to each who chose to

settle there; in which case, the other moiety of their wages should be allowed towards the building of a cottage. Punishment, which does not produce and encourage reformation, effects but little moral good to any state.

The *security*, which this settlement would give to our possessions in the East, is obvious; not only from a fleet that might be kept there in time of war, but likewise by making it a *depôt* for troops, &c. that might be speedily sent to any required part of India.

I shall suspend a little farther the thread of my history, and conclude my observations on the Cape of Good Hope, by submitting the following opinion, viz. that there may possibly be one grand agricultural and commercial advantage, derived from British colonies at the Cape, which has not yet been contemplated by any one; a branch of trade, as important as any article of colonial commerce yet known. The latitude and climate of the Cape-territory are similar to that part of China, where teas are produced, and in all pro-



bability, the teas of Chinese growth, which we import thence at an enormous expense, would, with proper cultivation and management, prove highly productive at the Cape. The balance of trade is wholly in favour of the Chinese; a crafty people, who consider this country, and all other European powers that trade with them, as receiving instead of conferring favours. The consumption of this necessary article increasing both in Europe and America, there can be little doubt of its being a permanent article of agriculture and commerce; and it is much in favour of the experiment relative to the growth of tea at the Cape, that it might be made at no considerable expense.

## CHAPTER LII.

*Arrive at St. Helena ; singular courtship ; Isle of Ascension ; catching of turtle ; short account of the interior, formed by a sub-marine volcano ; the island inhabited by sea-fowl, wild goats, and rats ; instinct of the young turtle, its many enemies ; an opinion respecting their food.*



WE made a pleasant short passage from the Cape to the island of St. Helena ; our decks covered with sheep and cattle, chiefly for the island. Our captain found it convenient to make a stay of three weeks, nor did the time appear at all heavy to us as passengers, being continually engaged in parties of pleasure to the country-houses of the governor or principal inhabitants. The ladies of this little island have long been remarked for beauty, and with much truth. I believe I fell desperately in love with some of these ladies, nearly twenty times while we were there ; but, most of



them being young as well as pretty, this is nothing extraordinary to relate. One of my courtships, however, at this island, was singular enough.

I had lodgings at Mrs. P——d's, a widow-lady, aged about seventy-five; her connections being among the most respectable in the island and her property considerable. About the time we arrived, her friends were much alarmed on account of a young man lately sent out as assistant-surgeon to the settlement, to whom, it was said, the old lady was going to be married. The captain of our ship, being acquainted with her friends and informed of their fears, gave me the hint, requesting I would give my aid towards setting aside so preposterous a match as twenty-three to seventy-five; and, as it promised some diversion, I had no objection.

The best way to break off their intended match I thought would be to begin courting the old girl myself. I set to it so heartily, that, within twenty-four hours, I was her professed swain; and, before a week had passed, I persuaded the old la-

dy to give a *fête* at her country-house, to which the governor and his lady, with most of the principal people, were invited; music and dancing on the green entertained the young and frolicsome. My mistress desired me to do the honours of the convivial board, herself and a few of the more elderly ladies keeping us company; nor were we at all sparing in our mirthful jokes on the occasion. Among other things, I thrice published the banns of marriage between the widow and myself, drinking a bumper-toast at each interval; and, as neither of the parties nor any one else forbade the banns, we were given joy to and saluted accordingly. In one respect, we paired well enough, being both completely lame: my antient *dulcinea* could not well rise from her chair without help, and then made a mighty slow progress in walking, or rather hobbling, with the aid of two canes. Nor could I, though with the assistance of a crutch-cane, make a much better march of it on both legs; but, if I wanted to make progress, by taking to



one leg only, I could get on, for a hundred yards or so, as well as most with two.

Matters having gone on thus rapidly with old Mother P—d and myself, and the surgeon being quite discarded, I thought it best to hold counsel with her friends, having no intention to stir a step farther. I could not agree to carry the farce on longer than while I sojourned in the island, as they wished me to do, by holding a promise to return and consummate the marriage, after I should have settled my affairs in England. They were still jealous of the old girl's licorice gums, (for teeth she had none,) when she should find I had really deserted her; but my own opinion was, that, being thus made sensible of her folly, pride would prevent her running retrograde towards the doctor.

The ship's stay growing short, I began to retreat, by expressing fears that, as a broken-down invalid soldier, I ought not to think of matrimony, with all the consequences that might ensue from having a young family. I delivered this with a very serious countenance, but she fairly

baffled all my resolves to be grave, by as seriously answering that my crooked leg, arising from an honourable wound, could never affect the children. This was rather more than I was prepared for, and all my attempts to check a loud laugh were in vain ; nor could any thing in the universe, after that, have prevented or preserved me from a similar breach of manners whenever I looked in her face. I was obliged to hop out as fast as I could ; and, from the concatenation of ideas, I could not refrain from laughing whenever I thought of it or met her afterwards. I was truly sorry to be the means of mortifying the poor old soul in a way I never intended, but it was impossible to avoid it. The second day after, she excused herself from joining her boarders at table, on account of rheumatic pains, and I was not sorry that I never saw her more. In this place, however, I may as well give an account of the conclusion of the old lady's love-frolics.

I had been in England about three months, when I was accosted, in the city, by an apparent stranger, who without ceremony reminded me of rivalling him in



the old lady's affections, declaring that he thought me as much in earnest as himself, until within a few days of my leaving the island; that he kept aloof for about a week after, and then, renewing his addresses, they were soon married; but the old girl took care to secure her property. Notwithstanding this, he had so managed, by refusing to bed with her after the first week or ten days, and making free with most of her female black servants, that at last, by advice of her friends, she agreed to a separation, giving him two thousand pounds, on condition of his quitting the island and signing, under proper bonds, a complete renunciation of any future claim on her property, which, being all his object, he very cheerfully consented to. He then jocularly observed to me, that he hoped I would acknowledge him to be a better doctor, for the cure of old women's love-fits, than myself.

From St. Helena, we ran down, with the trade-wind, to the Isle of Ascension; a scraggy barren rock, which, were it not for the famous large turtle that are caught

on it, would be known but as a mark, in the middle of the ocean, to be shunned by navigators. It is 500 miles from any other land and reckoned about 28 miles in circumference.

We bestowed one whole day in exploring the interior, in detached parties, but none of us were fortunate enough to find a single spot that had soil or vegetable mould sufficient to grow a common sallad. The whole surface was covered with rough, sharp, cinder-burnt, honey-comb rock, except where there appeared a stream of lava, that had formerly flowed from the crater of a high mountainous pinnacle, some miles from the part of the island we were at. On this congealed lava, which terminated in the sea, we could walk very well; and, as a matter of curiosity, I regretted we could not spare time to trace it to its source.

On some of the elevated parts of the rock, we found sea-birds of all descriptions, assembled together by thousands: these spots they had selected for breeding, and were thickly covered with their dung.



Those that were sitting on eggs, or with their young, did not move at the nearest approach, unless force was used. The greater part of them continued on their legs, without attempting to fly; some walking or waddling about, and others standing; but all joined in such an incessant Babel-like noise, that we could scarcely hear what each other said. We took away a considerable number of eggs; and, had the birds been worth any thing, we could have taken away hundreds of them, either by catching them with our hands or knocking them down with our sticks. I made a prisoner of one tropic bird, on account of its beautiful long plumage, with its two young, entertaining a hope of keeping one or other alive, but I did not succeed.

We found some purslane growing in places, and a low kind of bushes, which were all the vegetable productions we could discover that the wild goats of the island had to live upon. Two or three of these animals, which some of our sailors had run down for sport, were the most miserable-looking, shaggy, lean crea-

tures I ever saw, and stunk worse than pole-cats.

The turtle that we caught made us ample amends. We divided into two companies ; taking separate bays, and lying on the sands all night, in order to turn the turtle as they came up on the beach to lay their eggs in deep holes, which they scoop out in the sand with their fins. We caught fourteen thus, the smallest of which weighed more than two hundred pounds.

I conceive, from every appearance on and about this island, and its great distance from the two continents of Africa and America, that it must have been formed by a sub-marine volcano ; and, from its slight progress towards the attainment of a soil, or earth, on its surface, must (when compared with other volcanic islands) have been of as recent formation as most that are known. Yet this slight variation of its surface, that has been noticed since its discovery, denotes it to have remained nearly in its present state for many centuries.



The shores of this island abound with rats ; and, by the thousands of little skeleton turtle shells, scattered at the top of the beach, I fancied them the principal food they had to subsist on. These animals, when they are first hatched by the heat of the sun upon the sand wherein they are hid, are not bigger than the palm of a man's hand. Having cleared themselves of the sand, instinct immediately directs them to scamper down the beach to get into the sea : but they have three powerful enemies on the watch to intercept them ; the birds, hovering in the air ; the rats, on the look-out on the sand ; and voracious fish, equally destructive, who wait in readiness to devour them on their first entrance into the watery element.

To see thousands of eggs, the produce of one turtle, a person would be apt to imagine that the sea must swarm with them ; but, when we observe their numerous enemies, from each of the three elements, attacking them the instant they are burst from their leather-like shell, it then appears as extraordinary that so

many should escape. I have watched the fish lying in wait for the prey, and cruising about at the edge of the outer surf, with the water as transparent as glass ; when, if the little animal swims in ever so small a degree above the sandy bottom, they dart at it with almost a certainty of devouring. Its safety, while so young, small, and tender, appeared (so long as I could trace with my eye into deeper water) to be, in keeping close upon the sandy bottom, where it seemed to half bury its little body, while, by its fins, it crept almost imperceptibly along into deep water.

I am inclined to think that the turtle subsists by grazing on the great variety of sea-weed, if not of coral, growing at the bottom of the sea ; and likewise on some species of shell-fish and slow-moving insects found there : an opinion, which the strength of their bills seems to encourage.



## CHAPTER LIH.

*Land at Plymouth ; my salutation ; B—— continues with the ship ; the smell of tallow candles very offensive after a long absence ; intentions respecting my wounded leg ; Surgeon Sharp's candid advice.*



THE remainder of our passage to Europe had nothing remarkable ; our ship's company continuing in good health and free from scurvy, after so good a recruit at the Cape. I landed at Plymouth, after an absence of some years from Old England, sound and firm in heart, but no longer the “*gallant, gay, Lothario*” of former times.

It was on a beautiful summer's afternoon, one Sunday, early in July : my heart was as light as a feather, but one of my heels was too heavy to attempt cutting frolicsome capers with the many tempting, rosy, healthy-looking damsels, we met on our first landing. Curiosity, perhaps, had

drawn together more than usual, from its being known that we were from the two East-India ships still in sight.

My companion was a super-cargo from China, out of another ship, the two ships having kept company from St. Helena. I believe he thought me crazy; for, the instant I stepped on *terra firma*, I made a dead halt, to look round and admire the lovely groups of smiling tittering lasses there assembled. I was in a beauish kind of embroidered regimentals, and did homage to them all by my hat, blessing them and my own fortunate stars, for favouring me with so flattering a prospect on returning to the land of beauty.

Then, selecting a cluster of three merry-looking wenches, I marched up to them; and, taking one by the hand, I addressed the three with, "My dear lovely girls! let me hail it as a happy omen, after so long an absence, that, instead of kissing my native earth, as I intended on first landing, I may be permitted to salute some of its fairest fruit." And then, without farther ceremony, with my hat in my right hand



and my left half encircling them, I saluted the three in turn, most heartily. The male spectators, entering into the spirit of my feelings, took their hats off and gave three cheers. I made my best bow, and stumped along as happy and proud as an emperor. Nor had the good-natured girls any reason to fear being laughed at; for, having two new silk handkerchiefs in my pocket, I borrowed another of my companion, and requested each to accept one as a token of remembrance. But I could not persuade my companion to follow my example in the salutation.

My friend B——, who had most rigidly and steadily adhered to the duty of the ship, as an officer, from his first going on board at Sumatra, was now, owing to deaths, second officer on board under the captain, who placed great confidence in him. His determination, therefore, was to remain with the ship until she had discharged her cargo in the river; and, during that time, I was to make certain inquiries of and about his family, without acquainting them any thing concerning him; the

result of which inquiry was to guide his future conduct, Captain Richardson being very desirous of his going out with him again.

The super-cargo and I enjoyed every thing we could procure at the tavern we resorted to. All appeared excellent, with but one exception; and in that article we may possibly be thought to have been fantastical in the extreme, by those who have never resided long in hot climates. Four really good mould-candles were placed upon our table at night; the smell of which was as insupportable as it would be to any lady or gentleman to enter into a tallow-chandler's workshop, while boiling. We were obliged to order them away, and to have wax candles brought in lieu.

The time of year was pleasant, every thing appeared delightful, and we travelled leisurely to enjoy it all; but, forgetting to give orders to the contrary, our olfactory nerves were sure to be offended every night by very good mould tallow candles. We laughed heartily at ourselves, well aware that it would be attributed to whimsicality



and pride, and that we should be looked upon as Indian nabobs, loaded with more money than we knew what to do with, and charged in the reckonings accordingly.

My companion, I believe, was well enough escorted home by Dame Fortune, but it was the young lady, *Miss Fortune*, who was my hand-maid. Yet I am satisfied, that a stranger to us both, judging by our looks, actions, and flow of animal spirits, would have thought the reverse. Nor could any one have conceived, that it was my full expectation and intention, at that time, to undergo the amputation of my left leg, as soon as I could procure the best chirurgical assistance for that purpose in London; for, the limb being rather a clog than a help, I had made my mind up, before I left India, if it promised no better on my arrival in England, to have it cut off, and to throw it away as an encumbrance.


For this purpose, the day after I reached London, I waited on Surgeon Sharp, who received me with a liberality and philanthropy of disposition never to be erased

from my memory. He inquired minutely into every circumstance of the wound, the surgical aid, and the length of time I had suffered under various operations in India: and, having examined the shattered limb, he said I had been treated with great justice, and his only surprize was, that the surgeons had attempted to save the limb at all, especially in so hot a climate. He then literally *gave* me his opinion, (for he refused taking any *fee*,) that the change of climate, aided by a sound strong constitution, was likely to do better for me than all the surgeons in London. At any rate, he said, it was worthy of trial for a month or two, when, if I found no benefit, it would be time enough to cast it away. I followed his advice; and, gaining strength rapidly, I was soon satisfied, that, crippled as it was, it was preferable to a jury-leg.



## CHAPTER LIV.

*Curious adventure of Byrn with the celebrated  
Miss Kennedy.*



My capability of a future active military life was passed, and the consideration now was, what other occupation I could best pursue. Before I had determined this point, I engaged in a serious courtship, that terminated in marriage. This was not long about, yet I might probably have thought it very tedious, if a small adventure had not occurred, that helped to fill up some of my leisure time; and indeed it almost seemed, that, though I had given over travelling in search of adventures, they were determined to find me out.

During my stay at the Cape of Good Hope, two British officers, who said they had quitted the service in Bengal on account of ill health, formed an acquaintance

with me during the time I continued, and there I left them. They were straitened for cash, and I supplied them; taking a bill from one of them on his father, old General Desaguliers, of whom I had a slight knowledge. After my arrival, I sent it for acceptance, but it was refused, nor could I ever get it paid. In about six weeks, I heard of their arrival in England, and left notes for them with my address.

One of them, an Irishman, whom I shall designate by the name of Byrn, called upon me, expressing fears that his friend Desaguliers was no better than he ought to be. "But, my dear fellow," says Byrn, "to be sure I hold myself bound to see you repaid the whole of what you advanced for us at the Cape; so make yourself aisy about that, and give me joy into the bargain, for it is no trifle of good news I have to tell you." I listened with attention to a strange long story of his having left his father, (a man, as he said, of very large property in Ireland,) owing to a serious quarrel between his elder brother and himself, which had occasioned his being in the army nearly



five years in India; that, soon after I parted from him at the Cape, he received letters from his father, that had been sent round by Bengal, informing him of his brother's death, and earnestly desiring his return; that he had accordingly transmitted to his father his intention of taking his passage to England by the next ship, and hoped to find letters of credit to meet him in London upon his arrival, that he might appear as his son. All this, he said, had been done beyond his expectations; for his father was so rejoiced, and having some business to transact in London, that he had directed him to engage a fashionable house for three months, purchase a carriage and horses, and hire servants, &c. suitable to it. To accomplish all this, he added, that he had already received a remittance by bills for three thousand pounds.

I did not believe a single word he said; but he ran on, saying he had that morning made an extraordinary good purchase, from a lady of fashion, of all her rich furniture, plate, chariot, and horses: he was to dine with her that day and settle for them in

the evening, when he wished me much to accompany him and give him my opinion of his bargain.

My curiosity was excited, but I declined it, being engaged. He gave me two cards of address; the one, very decent apartments in the city, where he had resided since his arrival; the other in Newman-street, where he had made the grand purchase. He then inquired if I was engaged the next day; and, on my assuring him I was going down to Deptford, with an intent to spend most of the day with a particular friend on board the ship I came home in, he begged I would allow him to drive me thither in his carriage, as he much wished to go on board the ship that brought him from the Cape, which likewise lay at Deptford. To this I readily agreed, provided he came early. “Be sure I will,” says Byrn; “only tell me your breakfast-hour, and you may say I’ll be with you before you can put your *crame* into the *tay*.”

He was as good as his word; for, precisely at the time, there was a thundering rap at my humble door; and, looking out



at the window, I saw him step from a very handsome chariot, with a pair of nice horses ; a coachman and two footmen, in rich silver-laced liveries, attending. He was completely at home, and as intimate with my brother and sister (whose house I was at) in five minutes, as if he had known them for five years. With a most comfortable assurance, he had a great deal to say, with no small mixture of the *brogue* in his speech, that made him highly entertaining to those who were not accustomed to it. My sister, who was a merry-hearted one, could with difficulty make the breakfast, alternately laughing and apologizing. He tried to persuade her to accompany us, and she seemed willing, but I objected to it.

We drove to Deptford, and each went on board his respective ship. In little more than two hours, he came to me, saying he had finished all his business. He dined with us, and said he was determined to give a good house-warming before his father arrived ; and, considering me as his most particular friend in England, (where

he had never been before he landed from the ship that brought him from the Cape,) he requested me to name any early day, that would suit myself and friends that were present, to favour him with our company. An evening was accordingly fixed on, when he was in hopes, he said, of getting Lord C——, and a few other gentlemen from Ireland, to meet and make a jolly evening of it. He drove me home again; and, at parting, said he had omitted to put cash enough in his pocket to repay the money borrowed by him and Desagu-liers, but desired me to remind him on the appointed evening, should he not see me in the mean time.

On the day appointed, we were tolerably punctual, yet we found a considerable company of ladies and gentlemen already assembled. I remarked a superb side-board of plate, as we were ushered along by servants in new and elegant liveries. Curiosity and astonishment increased at every step: double folding-doors, lined with green and gold, opened into a handsome drawing-room.



My name being announced, Mr. Byrn was ready to receive me; and leading me up, with a half whisper, said, the lady of whom he had taken the house, furniture, &c. had done him the honour to stay and perform the honours of the house that evening. He then introduced me to a very handsome woman, with a remarkably fine prepossessing presence, and elegantly dressed. Her name I could not immediately catch, but I found that mine was quite familiar to her; and, after a general introduction to the whole company, among whom a count and a knight or two were mentioned, I was complimented with a seat at the lady's right hand.

A band of music soon struck up, and the bewitching charms of several beautiful women made it impossible to resist the temptation to dance. On a challenge from my fair hostess, I pointed (faintly) to my game leg. "Oh! never mind," she said; "I have heard, from your friend Byrn, of your agility in dancing on one leg with the ladies at the Cape, and I hope you will not refuse to your country-women what

you sported so freely with the Dutch lasses." There was no refusing such a challenge, and I did my best for a few dances, claiming long intervals.

Between the dances, I found myself much attended to by some of the more elderly gentlemen, who seemed earnest in pressing their eulogiums on the liberality and generosity of Mr. Byrn: endeavouring, by side-wind questions, to learn how long I had been acquainted with him in India, and admiring his good fortune in having so soon acquired a handsome property there. I listened coolly to all that was said; and, beginning to smell the rat, I answered cautiously, though with apparent carelessness.

After a while, I learned who our lovely hostess was, no less than the celebrated Miss Kennedy; but I could no way make out their allusions to Byrn's great generosity, or what his drift could be. It was evident that there was some false play, and I had no doubt I was introduced to give it a covering. I determined to explore the mystery, if possible, before I



went away, and then conduct myself accordingly. I found it too delicate a matter to open my mind to any one, but I listened attentively to all that was said by Byrn, Miss Kennedy, the company at large, or the friends who accompanied me: to the latter, when they whispered any surprise at the extravagant costliness of the whole, my answer was, “*Vive la bagatelle!* never mind, who’s afraid?” and I entered as much as possible into the full gaiety of the evening.

We sat down to a most costly supper at one o’clock. I was seated close by my hostess; the glass circulated briskly, and my friend Byrn became very jocular: at length, thrown a little off his guard, as I suppose, he desired me to take care of his *wife* and help her to some pine-apple, of which he knew she was fond. This might have passed as a jocular expression; but a gentleman, getting up, said that, as our kind host had himself let the cat out of the bag, he should propose the health of the bride and bridegroom, Mr. and Mrs. Byrn, in a bumper: this was done with great

glee, and Mr. Byrn with the *ci-devant* Miss Kennedy returned thanks. During the loud hilarity that succeeded, I asked her seriously if it were true that they were married? "Yes," she replied. "I am sorry for it," I rejoined. She replied, "You alarm me."—"Come," said I, "take a glass of wine with me to prevent notice, while, in a few words, I advise you to summon that courage which your situation in life must have given you, and do not let it be seen that you are in the least discomposed; otherwise, Byrn will be jealous of my disclosing what he wishes to conceal." I then assured her that it was my firm belief he was not worth a shilling, and that he had some bad design against any property she had in her possession; that I acquainted her thus early, to put her on her guard and remove every impression of credit given to him on the score of my acquaintance, which it was evident he had been base enough thus to endeavour to establish. I added, "Now lose no time, jump up as in choice spirits, challenging the young and lively to recommence dan-



cing, while your husband keeps the bottle circulating for the honour of Ireland, with those who prefer it." This she, with good management, immediately executed ; and, during the bustle of moving, I desired her to consult with any of the gentlemen she could depend on as her friends, when, if they thought it politic, I had no objection to avow all I had said and expose him immediately.

In about half an hour, three charming young romps came in ; and, saying they were determined I should indulge each of them with a one-legged dance, fairly forced me along with them. This afforded an opportunity, after the first dance, of stepping aside for a few minutes, when I was informed the result of the consultation was, to let every thing pass quietly on, to prevent his suspecting he was discovered, until measures could be taken the next morning to prevent his using that power, which, as her husband, (they had been married that same day,) he could now claim over all her property of plate, jewels, furniture, carriage, and horses. I promised to come forward at any time and confront him, if

he denied his lies to me concerning his father and the remittance from Ireland, opposed to his lies to her and her friends, of his coming home from India with a handsome fortune.

From the particulars of his deceptions, which I became acquainted with afterwards, it appeared that, when he landed at Portsmouth, as a *gentleman* from India, he found means to introduce himself to Lord C——, who chanced to be at the same inn, giving his lordship to understand that he had been very successful in India; that, as the settling his affairs would detain him some time in London, a place he was a stranger to, and being a young man, he might be likely enough to seek pleasure among the ladies; but, from the accounts he had heard, he was fearful of being taken in and injured; money he regarded not, provided the party was agreeable and he could place confidence. He therefore earnestly requested his lordship would oblige him so far as to give the address of any lady he could recommend. On which, his lordship, very good-naturedly, (think-



ing it might be serving an *old* acquaintance as well as a *new* one,) wrote Miss Kennedy's address, recommended by C——.

Notwithstanding this introduction, the lady declined receiving any civilities from him for three or four days, until she learned, for a certainty, that he came passenger in such a ship from India. In these few days he managed to fall desperately in love with her, admiring the delicacy and prudence of her conduct so much, that, provided she could be content to retire into the country and live within the moderate fortune he had brought home with him, which he acknowledged did not exceed thirty thousand pounds, he would marry her immediately and reckon himself a very happy fellow. She thanked him for his liberal offer, such as, in her situation, she had no reason to expect; and observed, that nothing could be more agreeable to her than the proposed retirement, but she was fearful he might hereafter repent so hasty a match. On his farther persisting, she informed him, in order to remove every appearance of deception on her part,

that she was then indebted, to various tradesmen, upwards of 1200*l.*; that their confidence in her was great at present, but, the instant she was married, they would expect to be paid; that, although she appeared to roll in affluence, and really had very great and liberal friends to support her, yet her establishment was proportionably expensive and involved her in debt.

This afforded Byrn fresh matter for admiring her ingenuous conduct, and he declared his readiness to pay all she owed immediately after their marriage: as a proof of which, he desired to see her principal creditors. They were reputable tradesmen, who made inquiries at the India-house, the Jerusalem, and at his apartments in the city, where they were satisfied of his identity as an officer just arrived from India. He had likewise spoken of me as his very intimate friend: they had accordingly made some distant inquiries concerning me, and from the character of one judged of the other. From all this, fearful of giving offence by being more particular, and satisfied in themselves, that,



unless he was a man of property, he would be running into ruin with open eyes, it was considered by her and her friends to be too good an offer to be rejected.

By dint of mere impudence, therefore, he had carried his point thus far, and it now occurred to them, that he had talked of sending all the plate to have his arms engraven thereon. His plan appeared, therefore, to convert all he could into cash, and make off. To prevent his having any opportunity or time to do mischief, he was arrested, the next day, at the suit of her principal creditors, and told in plain terms the reason. Finding himself detected, he no longer pretended to carry on the farce of being a man of property, but attempted another, equally untenable, which was to persuade his dear wife that it was pure love, which made him desperate.

Being soon convinced that his dear wife was not to be cajoled a second time, he threw himself on the clemency of her creditors, saying he was ready to do any thing they or his wife required of him. Her fears were, lest her visiting friends should

hear of her having a husband, and become shy on that account. He was therefore kept close in a spunging-house for some time, until very strong articles were drawn up for him to execute, with suitable bonds that would lay him in jail for life, if forfeited : by these, he renounced all claim whatever to her or her property, and bound himself to leave the kingdom for ever. To enable him to do this, she obtained for him a commission in a regiment stationed in Africa, for which she equipped him very liberally, and some of her creditors saw him safely embarked. Thus both the marriage and finale were managed so well, as to be kept secret without injury to the lady's reputation.



## CHAPTER LV.

*Reconcile my old ship-mate B—— to his family ; my reception at the secretary-of-state's office.*



My application and attention to my friend B——'s affairs with his relations proved favourable. I made them acquainted with what he had endured, and that I was persuaded he would persevere in a complete seclusion from his family, unless some advances towards a reconciliation were made him through me. I found they had suffered a good deal from the uncertainty of what was become of him for several years ; nor did I acquaint them where he then was, until I perceived a strong inclination on their part to be reconciled. This made all things easy, and I had the pleasure of introducing my friend to the bosom of his own family.

I had been a few months in England and repeatedly called on Lord Hillsborough, then secretary-of-state, to deliver letters from gentlemen in India, in high situations there, which I had promised not to part with but into his lordship's own hands. Though the time of my calling for that purpose was early, and I had dressed myself in my best, as a compliment I thought due to his lordship, I was regularly told, by the porter, that his lordship was not at home. At length, I became as indifferent about the delivery, as they seemed to be about the receipt, of the letters; and, without getting out of the chair or coach, as it might be, when passing that way, I said I had letters to deliver, but would not leave them.

Resolved at last to bring it to some conclusion, I called in a hackney-coach one day, as I was passing on other business; and, getting out, I demanded, in a careless kind of authoritative tone, if his lordship was at home. "No," was the reply. "Then let me see some person who, in his lordship's absence, attends to give an an-



swell on business." By this time, there were seven or eight footmen gathered; and I observed them eyeing my dress, which was plain enough that day, and I suppose they likewise noticed my common hackney coach, calculating what kind of answer I merited. Raising my voice, I ordered them to shew me into a room, and send some one of the upper servants to me. This was done: his lordship's gentleman attended, to whom I observed how often I had called and for what purpose; adding, I was going out of town and might be absent for months, so that, if I could not deliver the letters from his lordship's friends then, it was uncertain how long it might be. I was desired to be seated for a minute: he soon returned with his lordship's compliments, requesting I would wait a few minutes longer, being then engaged with the Marquis of Townshend.

When I delivered the letters, I acquainted his lordship with the cause of his not receiving them sooner. Having read one letter, he politely said that he found his was the greatest loss, as I was particularly

referred to for giving him fuller information on subjects therein mentioned. This appeared curious enough to me, who had never understood there was any such reference, or on what subjects. I could only say, his lordship should be welcome to any information in my power. I was desired to amuse myself with a beautiful aviary of curious birds, that the lately-deceased Lady Hillsborough had been fond of, while his lordship perused the letters.

He kept me nearly an hour and a half afterwards, in close conversation on various subjects relative to India; requesting I would call again whenever I had an opportunity, or wished to see him. I again hinted the difficulty I had experienced in obtaining the present interview. He smiled, observing there would be no difficulty in future, as his servants would now know that I came rather to confer than solicit favours.

I could not forbear smiling, in turn, at the conceit which shot across my mind, that a nobleman of his rank should consider an invalid half-pay lieutenant as the



person conferring obligations on the Premier of England. I answered, that, at any time, his lordship might wish to see and converse farther, I would attend his commands.

Retiring to my poor hack, I could scarcely keep my countenance at the obsequious attendance of the same fellows, who had at first measured me with their eyes on my entrance into the lobby. The porter in particular, with his slate, requested the honour of my address: I indulged him with my name and place of abode in the country, leaving him to affix what rank he pleased to the cockade in my hat.

My friends thought me much to blame in not calling again upon his lordship; but, as I never received any fresh intimation, I could not endure the appearance of dancing attendance, as if a solicitor for favours. I do not pretend to justify this; it may be reckoned a fastidious pride, which I had no right to assume. Be it so: I shall not dispute it, and have only to say, that, through life, I have so often ex-

perienced the same principle governing within, that I can account for it in no other way than its being the nature of the animal; and, having travelled on very fairly without such obsequiousness, I have never lamented it.

---

## CHAPTER LVI.

*Happily married; irreparable loss of wife and child within a year.*



SCENES and struggles, far different from those which I had ever been accustomed to, were now preparing for me. Without disparagement to any others of the fair sex, I was most happily united to one of the best and most amiable of women, with a mind so truly angelic, so wonderfully pure, that, though there may be others (I hope many) equally so, I feel confident none



ever exceeded, in all the female virtues, my beloved Sarah.

One short year, only, was allotted me to enjoy such perfect domestic felicity as it would be difficult to parallel. My wife, my child, were both suddenly torn from me within the month after she was brought to bed. Those, and those only, who have experienced such a loss, know how to appreciate my mental sufferings on the occasion.

---

## CHAPTER LVII.

*Unsettled ; commence underwriter at Lloyd's ; no losses, yet give it up ; marry again ; engage largely in farming, and in an extensive liquor-business ; misfortunes of my wife's father.*

I HAD commenced farming, upon a small scale, on the spot where I was born ; to which I took so strong a liking, that I had engaged for another farm, pretty near where

I lived, when my domestic happiness was so completely destroyed. In order, therefore, to divert my thoughts, and prevent a gloom from settling on my mind, I gave up house-keeping, and with my horse and servant visited different counties, continually changing the scene for a few months; until, tired of so sauntering a life, without any fixed object, I returned to the metropolis, on the invitation of a relation older than myself; who, being a considerable underwriter at Lloyd's, pressed me much to engage in the same way, as an advantageous employ that would wholesomely fill up my time.

I attended to see the nature of it, and was introduced by him to various merchants and brokers, not merely as his relation, but as a practical seaman, well acquainted with the nature and risks of different voyages; a knowledge, at that time, rather scanty among the underwriters.

I was favourably received, and have no doubt but I might have done well; but mere hazard of money for money did not



accord with my feelings. And, although I never feared buffeting real storms and tempests, I soon began to find my pillow was not so easy and pleasant as it had been, owing to imaginary storms in my dreams.

I was convinced the mere making of money, without some personal prowess or merit of active ingenuity, would never make me happy. On the other hand, the chance of being entirely ruined, now that I was an invalid and rendered incapable of my former exertions, damped my spirits. In short, I discovered I was not calculated for a gambler; I therefore made my bow and quitted Lloyd's, leaving my relation to settle the profit and loss of the little I had done. Fortunately, this turned out better than could have been expected, all profit and no loss, which I believe few underwriters can say.

The spring and spirit of exertion seemed to relax after the conclusion of my matrimonial comforts, and I indulged a longing wish for a renewal. Nor was it long before I turned my thoughts that way, and found

another blooming helpmate, who proved a worthy successor of my first wife ; but, unhappily for us both, the misfortunes of her family proved a great drawback on our felicity. At the time of our marriage, it was my full intention to employ myself in farming only, and I was building and fitting up my house, on a newly-engaged farm, accordingly ; but circumstances occurred, that induced me to engage in an extensive liquor-business, with a younger brother\*. Thinking it improper, when in the pursuit of trade, to sport my carriage, I laid it down, though I continued my farming.

Within a few months after our marriage, my father-in-law became a bankrupt for more than sixty thousand pounds. He was my banker at the time, and a letter by the post was the first intimation I had of the likelihood of such a misfortune ; it enclosed a bill for something more than the balance due to me, with these few words ; “ I send

\* This was one of the most eventful mistakes of my life ; which, for the chance of saving others from certain ruin, eventually proved the cause of most of the hard struggles I afterwards endured.




you this, which a short time will explain." In the hurry of sending it, the letter was unsealed, but it came safe.

The thing was too evident to need much explanation; and, taking a post-chaise, I told my wife what she must expect to find on our arrival at her father's. It proved so bad a failure, that the unhappy man never could procure a certificate. He had, however, behaved so honourably to me in remitting what I had entrusted him with as my banker, that, in addition to the close connection I had formed, I was desirous of giving him and the family every assistance in my power, considering him as an unfortunate but an honest man. I did not hesitate, therefore, to aid him with money and credit, to enable him to trade in some borrowed name, until his affairs could be settled. For a long time, I found him punctual and correct, and was happy to be thus the means of enabling him to support his family.

## CHAPTER LVIII.

*Arrested for 1200l. by a man I never saw nor heard of.*



THE first check I received was rather extraordinary. To the nature of his concern I was an entire stranger; understanding that, from his situation as an uncertificated bankrupt, secrecy was necessary, I relied entirely on his honour. But I did not relish being roused out of my bed, at one o'clock in the morning, by an express from London, with a letter from him, dated Wood-street Compter, informing me that a writ was out against me for 1200l. at the suit of some man with a hard foreign name, which I had never heard of before; that he himself was arrested for a similar sum by the same person; and that the officer would be down in the country the next forenoon to arrest me, which he thus warned me of.



I was as much surprised as at the first intimation of the bankruptcy, and inquired of my wife if she knew or ever heard of a man of that name. She replied in the negative; and, dismissing the express, I went to bed again; but, my endeavours to get to sleep being in vain, I arose, ordered my horse, and rode upwards of thirty miles to breakfast with a relation, whom I informed of the business as far as I was myself acquainted with it. On his inquiring in what manner I meant to proceed, I said my intention was to request him to accompany me to the Compter, inquire the cause, and give bail if necessary. On his remarking that he thought it a bold proceeding, I observed that I had, on all occasions, found it best and safest to face my danger.

Calling on another friend in our way, we proceeded to the Compter; and, inquiring of the clerk if such a writ was issued, understood that an officer (then present) was just going off to execute it. I said I was the person against whom the

writ was taken, and, having heard of it, came prepared to give the necessary bail. This done, I inquired if they knew any thing of the person that sued out the writ. They said he appeared, by his dialect, to be a foreigner, and was attended by an attorney. They well remembered the man, from the shabby figure he made when swearing to debts of 1200*l.* against three different gentlemen, and particularly remarked his shoes to be so much worn that his naked feet appeared through them.

I next inquired for my father-in-law, Mr. R——, and was shewn to his apartment: from him I learnt that this man had been employed by him as a servant: that he detected him in robbing him to a considerable amount; and that the fellow, being apprehensive of the consequence, had, by the aid and advice of an attorney, sworn the debt against his master, merely to obtain time for escape during the arrest. And farthermore, from a knowledge of his master's situation, he conceived that the only two persons likely to bail him



were myself and the broker who managed his business: to procrastinate the bail, he had sworn to similar debts against us, and it answered his purpose, for we never heard any thing more of the scoundrel.

I thought then, and still continue to think, that some remedy should be provided to guard against such vexatious and false arrests; for, as the law of arrests for debt now stands, a man of reputation and property, in an extensive line of business, may be ruined from the injury done to his credit by a false arrest to a large amount, which any malicious wicked villain, not to be found afterwards, may chuse to swear against him.

## CHAPTER LIX.

*Threatened to be arrested for 4500*l.* my father-in-law's debts; serious alternative of sacrificing a considerable property or hanging him.*



I DID not relish so free a participation of another man's troubles; yet, bad as this had been, worse soon followed. Having indulged him, from time to time, with such running cash as I could spare, as well as my notes at two or three months, which he provided for as they became due at my banker's, I gave him notice when I should want it again, and he had in general been punctual. But one day, when he was to meet me at an inn to repay me 200*l.* I received a letter from him, acquainting me he was obliged to keep out of the way, for fear lest his broker, Mr. C——, should arrest him.

I had frequently, when in town, dined with both at a tavern, and so far was ac-



quainted with C——. I therefore went directly to his house, to inquire the cause. With an affected unconcern, he turned over the leaves of his ledger until he came to an account, at the head of which stood my own name; and, pointing with his finger for me to see it, he said, “The balance of this account, which stands in your name, is 4500*l.* and odd; which, if your friend does not pay me very soon, you must.”

At first, I hardly knew how to keep within bounds; but, as soon as I could collect myself, I asked him how he could suppose me so egregious a fool as to believe, that, merely from his placing my name at the head of an account, I should become liable to pay it. His answer was, that my notes, which I so frequently gave my friend to purchase goods with, made payable to him (C——) and others, would prove my being concerned, &c. At this time, I knew he had two notes of mine, for 150*l.* each, which I acknowledged must be paid as they came due, and, as to any thing farther, I set him at defiance.

He desired me to consider coolly of the business, and meet him on the ensuing day; observing, that it would be better to settle it quietly, as, although he believed me to be a man of property, it might injure my credit in an extensive line of business. I understood the threat, and, promising to meet him agreeably to his proposal, I retired to my inn for half an hour, to consider what was best to be done.

I had some bills of my own coming due the next day, which, from the disappointment of the 200*l.* were not quite provided for. I could, at a word, have procured this money from many; but, in the situation in which I should be placed if C—— put his threats in execution, I could not reconcile myself to borrow. It was, however, necessary to provide for them, and at last I applied to the merchant to whom the largest note was due; telling him, that, from a sudden disappointment, I was not provided for his note, and requesting his assistance of 150*l.* for the purpose. This was done directly, he laughing at my squeamishness in asking for it.



When I had thus settled my own money matters, I again retired to consider: the intention of C—— was evidently to *alarm* me with the fear of injury to my credit with those connected with me in business. I took my measures accordingly, and went round to every merchant with whom I had connections, and acquainted them with the exact state of things. They were pleased with this openness of conduct, and offered every assistance as to giving bail, &c. should C—— be hardy enough to execute his threats.

We met at the appointed time, when he told me he had consulted his attorney, who was clearly of opinion I was liable to pay the whole debt; but he added, as he did not wish to injure my credit, that he would make it as easy as possible, by receiving it in such instalments as would be most convenient. I cut the matter short, assuring him, when I did pay, it should be altogether, but that I did not mean to pay one shilling of it without being compelled; and, as to any injury he supposed my credit might suffer, I would now in-

form him I had guarded against that, having benefited by the threatening hint he had given the day before; that I had already called upon all whom my credit concerned, and acquainted them with the business; moreover, that they had authorized me to tell him, instead of being uneasy, they were ready to give me every necessary support by bail, &c. I added, he might therefore follow his attorney's directions as soon as he thought proper, and I had only to request him to proceed against me as a gentleman who meant to meet the question fairly. His disappointment was evident; and, finding he could make no impression on me as to the book-debt, he said he either misunderstood me or I was greatly deceived as to the number and amount of my notes which he had by him; for, on examination, he found he had notes of mine to the amount of 1400*l*. I said that was impossible, well knowing there were no other than the two which I had mentioned. What was my surprize, then, to see him open his pocket-book



and take out notes, *in my name*, to that amount!

I requested a moment's pause, and asked if he received those notes himself from the party. He replied affirmatively. I examined them; and, though they were well enough executed to mislead an indifferent person at first sight, I had no difficulty in discovering the hand-writing. I then observed to him, that those which I acknowledged were made payable at my banker's and the others were not. To this he answered, that the person had told him I did not chuse to have so many of those notes carried to my banker's; that they were, therefore, made payable at his compting-house; and that he had frequently had such notes before, which were generally taken up a few days before they became due. I assured him the notes were not of my writing, which, by a close inspection, he might convince himself of, nor had I any knowledge of their existence. "Why, then," said C——, "if the money be not paid for all these notes, the forger of them shall hang."

We were both silent for some time. He then began, "Sir, I know that the lease of the soap-house and of the place where he lives were bought in your name, and I suppose you have them as securities for your money."—"Just so."—"Then, sir, I make this proposition: let them, with what is on the premises, be made over to me in lieu of the notes, or the party, if to be found alive, shall be in goal before this time to-morrow."—"Mr. C——, this is so unexpected and very serious a discovery, that I will not undertake to give an answer before to-morrow morning."—"Will you promise me, on your honour," said C——, "that you will not by any means give the person notice to get away." I assured him I knew not where he was; that I had wished much to see him, but understood he was afraid to meet me; that I believed his wife knew, and if possible I meant to see him before ten o'clock the next morning; and that I would not, on my honour, acquaint the person nor any one else with any matter or thing that might urge him to flight, before I met him again at the time



appointed to give my answer. We then parted.

There was no doubt as to the fact of what this unhappy man had done: inquiries why he had so done would now prove useless, the consequences being inevitable if once made public. With difficulty I procured a meeting; he trembled as if going to receive sentence of death, and but little passed at the interview. I returned to my wife, who was on a visit at her mother's, and embraced her and my child with considerable agitation, but declined accounting for it, retiring to consider what I ought to do. I had to sacrifice property to a considerable amount, or hang my wife's father and bid adieu to domestic happiness! I made my mind up to relinquish property for the preservation of domestic peace and comfort. I might here be accused of a want of sensibility for the family. But, to obviate any charge of this kind, I think it proper to remark, that the whole family of the name are extinct: therefore none can suffer by the perusal of this chapter.

## CHAPTER LX.

*Quit mercantile concerns ; retire solely to farming ; difference of living in the country within the last fifty years.*



Soon after this, I gave up my large concern in the wine and spirit trade, retiring to my farm, which I grew more delighted with. I resided for several years on my native spot, endeavouring to improve in the practical knowledge of farming, by the aid and information of some of the best plough-farmers in England.

My leisure time was occupied in endeavouring to bring forward and promote such plans, societies, &c. as I thought would be conducive to public benefit and convenience, and most likely to harmonize and bring together families and neighbours who knew little of each other but by name ; thus improving the understanding by an extended knowledge of men and things.



The part of the country I am speaking of was within fifty miles of the metropolis, yet it was, comparatively, but little known. Looking back about forty years, I do not recollect more than eight single-horse chaises in the whole district, consisting of twenty-seven opulent parishes; and there are now few farmers, holding 200 acres of land, who do not keep their chaises, and some their four-wheel carriages. Women and young people had little or no society but among their relations; and the convivial meetings of the men, either at home or abroad, consisted chiefly in trying whose head was hardest at drinking flip or punch, sitting all the time enveloped in a thick atmosphere of tobacco-smoke.

At one of the earliest public meetings I attended, after becoming a resident, about thirty people were crowded together in a room, the ceiling of which I could reach with my knuckles, and all but one were smoking. A farmer came, fresh from the air, wishing to speak with the gentleman who did not smoke; and, having passed

with difficulty to the back of his chair on opening his mouth to speak, he was half strangled by the fumes. After several minutes, attempting in vain to say what he wanted, he abruptly asked the gentleman, if he could remain there without smoking in his own defence : and, on his saying, “ Yes, pretty well, Master Hunwix, by use.” — “ Why, then, sir,” says Hunwix, “ you may bid the d—l kiss your —.” I merely repeat this, to convey a stronger idea of the suffocating atmosphere these gentlemen of the country could sit and enjoy themselves in.

Mixed societies of sexes and families were chiefly confined to meetings at fairs, and a few horse or jack-ass races in the summer. There were but two or three families who ever thought of treating the young people with a dance. The roads, likewise, through most of the parishes, were almost impassable, and were considered by the farmers as the best security against a rise of their rents by the landlords ; since, from the fear of breaking their necks or catching an ague, which was reported to hang



on every bush, very few ever visited their estates more than once in their lives, and many not at all. When the turnpike-road, therefore, was first introduced, the farmers conceived the country would be ruined ; and, as my father was the principal means of obtaining the turnpike, I have often heard him much censured for it. It is true that most of the farms have been raised to double, treble, and some quadruple, the former rents ; but this is not so much owing to the landlords coming down to the farm, as the tenants riding up to the landlord and bidding against each other. Nor has the rise of rent, when taken fairly with other circumstances, operated against the farmers interest ; for, speaking generally, I am persuaded that the farmers throughout the district gain more money yearly, at the present time, than they did at the former low rents. Whether they accumulate and save as much is a different question ; but where can be found another district, of more than twenty miles in extent, without ma-

nufactory, commerce, or even thoroughfare, where they live half so generously and well? Nor do I think that any of them would like to exchange their present conveniences, and pleasant, social, mixed, meetings, which harmonize and smooth the rugged path of life, for all the fancied advantages their fore-fathers had in the rent of the land.

I am delivering my opinion as it was more than twenty years back, when I left the country, and do not mean to include those farms which have been let at the extravagant high rents of late years prevalent all over the kingdom; for, I consider many of them as contracts made between fools and madmen, which must terminate accordingly.



## CHAPTER LXI.

*Anecdotes of worthy clergymen ; poetical order for wine ; suitable answer.*



It may appear a little singular, in so rich a corn-country, formerly well stocked with game, with no great men to obstruct any fair sportsmen, and so near the metropolis, that so few clergymen should be found to reside on their livings. During the many years I knew the country, I do not remember more than three constant residents at any one time, and those were on livings of the lowest value in the district.

It is not my wish to criticise the motives of that reverend body, whose general as well as individual character ought to be upheld with every possible degree of respect. I merely mention the fact ; and, as a kind of collateral proof, insert the following copy of a petition, to which I was a sub-

scribing petitioner, sent to Lord T——, at that time Lord High Chancellor of Great Britain.

“ My Lord,

“ We, the inhabitants and parishioners of L. S. in the county of . . . . beg leave to make known to your lordship the disagreeable situation which your petitioners ever have been and still are (but for our hopes in your lordship’s well-known attention to unprotected merit) likely to be continued in, by the non-residence of their rectors. The living of this parish being now vacant, and in your lordship’s gift, we humbly presume to request the same in favour of the Reverend . . . . . a curate, who has resided and done duty in this neighbourhood, as such, for more than twenty-seven years; a clergyman whom we all respect for his virtues and on whom we can depend for residing with us. But, if given to a stranger, we are sorry that truth obliges us to declare, he sends us whatever curate he can get to do his business cheapest; assigning, as a reason, that the country is too unhealthy for him to live in, and the



value of the living (120*l.* a year) too small to allow more than 15*l.* a year for a curate. My lord, we could enlarge much on this subject, but are fearful of intruding: we will only beg leave to make this remark, that all the twenty-seven neighbouring parishes in this district being in the same predicament, served by curates, (three, four, and sometimes five, churches to one curate,) we have little or no relief, if we ride to any neighbouring church, for it is gallop and get forward with them all; and, from the little respectability of some of their characters, we cannot say we have much desire. Your petitioners compose and contain every individual in the parish that pays tythe, and are all plain humble farmers, with little or no acquaintance with great men. But, emboldened by the high ideas they entertain of your lordship's considerate goodness, they earnestly solicit your lordship will be pleased to grant the rectory of this parish to the Reverend  
 .....

“ And your petitioners, &c. &c.”

We were not successful; and this worthy clergyman remained a poor curate, until a considerate neighbouring gentleman-farmer, from pure regard to his character, made his life comfortable by presenting him to a small living in his gift. I rejoice in this opportunity of doing justice to the merit both of the donor and receiver.

I should not do justice to a worthy deceased rector, were I not to make him an exception to my general remark. There are some few who yet remember him, and all who do can bear testimony to the truly benevolent good character of Doctor T——. A pleasant anecdote of this gentleman, when he turned a deaf ear to what he did not wish to have forced back to memory, may not be unacceptable.

The doctor was considerably advanced in years and very deaf. An old college-chum-acquaintance had, for many years, made a convenient point of visiting the doctor, or rather a visitation of a few weeks to the doctor's hospitable mansion, where he had always found a hearty welcome, although, being of the leaky sort, he was



not the best suited for a sober man's companion: but the doctor's good-nature overlooked what he did not wish to have seen in his old chum. This gentleman, arriving at the doctor's on an evening when he had company, with many of whom he was acquainted, was in such high spirits from the circling glass, in addition to what he had gathered on his journey, that he could not refrain an attempt to be witty and pass a joke at his friend's expense.

The doctor was engaged with some ladies at a card-table, while the gentlemen were regaling with the bottle. The visitor hinted his intention, and was advised against it; but, persevering, he moved to the back of his friend's chair, and, raising his voice loud enough for the doctor to hear, he inquired if his old favourite black-eyed Betty (who made the doctor's bed while at college) was alive and well. The doctor would not hear, and continued the game with the greatest composure; but the ladies could not forbear tittering and laughing, which encouraged the visitor to repeat his inquiry a little louder. The doctor, rising deli-

berately from his chair, said he was sorry his chum could not make it more agreeable to stay longer, but he would order the servant to bring out his horse immediately; and, taking up his silver bell from the table, he rang it until his house-keeper appeared, to whom he gave directions about his chum's horse being ordered out. As soon as the noise of the bell would permit, the visitor wished to explain; saying his friend misunderstood him, nothing in the world being farther from his thoughts than being in a hurry to go away, as he had come purposely to stay a week or two with him as usual. The doctor, however, still turned a deaf ear, begged his friend to make no apology about making so short a visit, and again set his bell to work for his servant to bring the gentleman's great-coat, as he was in a hurry. At every interval of ringing the bell and giving orders to hasten bringing the horse out, the visitor attempted an explanation; but the reverend doctor, with a composed pleasant countenance, (while the whole company beside were ready to burst with their endeavours to refrain from



laughter,) as often repeated his request that his friend would not make so many apologies about his stay, fairly hurried him out of the house, saw him mounted, wished him a good night, and assured his chum, that, when he could make it more agreeable to stay longer, he should be glad to see him again.

To judge of the clergy in this part of the country, half a century back, from a jingling bit of poetry I have by me, might not appear so candid, and I insert it merely as a laughable specimen of the *retort poetical*. My father was in the wine and tobacco trade, and received the following note from a curate just arrived in the country, who understood he was fond of a little rhyming.

1.

Captain . . . . . I am told,  
 You sell wine that is old,  
 Good-flavoured, clean, and so forth;  
 If you'll send me an hamper in  
 Without any tampering,  
 I'll pay you for't what it is worth.

2.

I likewise stand in much need  
 Of some Indian weed,  
*Vulg. dict.* tobacco by many;

I have smoked some from you,  
 And believe me 'tis true,  
 I never smoked better from any.

3.

Pray send me six pound,  
 Made up square or round,  
 It signifies nothing at all;  
 And come when you will,  
 I'll pay you your bill  
 Whene'er you think proper to call.

To this, the following answer was sent.

Reverend Sir,

1.

Doctor . . . . . and his curate  
 Have made me obdurate,  
 For they wanted wine, bright, old, and so forth:  
 Though no coin in their breeches,  
 They came with fair speeches,  
 And promised to pay for't what it was worth.

2.

Now, my faith being strong  
 And thinking no wrong,  
 I trusted them both with brandy and wine;  
 But believe me, good sir,  
 Without pother or stir,  
 They never came near to pay me the coin.

3.

To urge, sir, I'm loth,  
 Bad reflections on cloth,  
 And a cloth that claims *jure divino*;  
 But a curate, you know,  
 May rove to and fro,  
 Pray then where must I look for my *rhino*?




However, to prove that more was said of the old than was meant to be attributed to the new comer, a postscript was added, signifying that the answer was only in conformity to the old adage of the church, viz. “ *No pecunia, no paternoster.*” And, to make amends for the poetry, the wine and tobacco followed soon after.

---

## CHAPTER LXII.

*Pleasant and useful public meetings promoted; anecdotes of a rich man; improvements easily made, if undertaken properly; people in the country as profligate in principle as they are in cities.*



To return from this digression. It can hardly be conceived what difficulty I at first had to procure from twenty to thirty subscribers, at one guinea each, to establish an assembly for the winter-season; yet,

before I left the country, there was one in most towns in the district.

I proposed next a book-society, the very sound of which was at first laughed at; but, by the persevering aid of two clergymen, one of the established church and the other a dissenter, it succeeded; affording, for many years, amusement with instruction, until at length I had the satisfaction to observe, there were many applicants for admission on a vacancy, when the number limited was complete.

Nearly about the same time, I planned the establishment of a weekly market, there not being one nearer than twenty miles; but it required management to overcome the many obstinate prejudices opposed to it. I persuaded some gentlemen-farmers in the neighbourhood to agree to dine together every market-day, or forfeit a small sum each for absence; the forfeit-money to go to the reckoning. This little manœuvre answered so well, that, at the close of the year, when the first agreement ended, those who had regularly attended found so many pleasant comforts and conveniences at-



tached to it, that they very readily agreed to extend the meeting, by a plan of association for the prosecution of robberies and other offences committed on the property of the subscribers. A committee of this association was to meet every market-day and dine together, subject to forfeit as before. And, this being an open committee for any subscriber to the association to join, if he thought proper to agree to the forfeits, it gathered strength most rapidly; and the plan itself, being much approved, was soon adopted by many considerable towns throughout the county. The town, where this new market with the association was holden, reaped considerable advantage, and there was scarcely an individual in the whole district who did not receive some benefit from it.

This may have too much the appearance of sounding one's own praise, yet why should I not be as just to myself as to others? I will therefore continue to claim credit for such improvements as I was the principal means of introducing; and, possessing but moderate other riches to be-

queath my children, it is due to them to make good my claim to these small exertions, which some few of my quondam rich neighbours envied me much more than I ever envied their greatness.

This brings to my remembrance a smart retort to one of them, who, pluming himself on his property, was rebuking an honest tradesman for not attending to him so much as he expected; saying, “Why, fellow! do you not know that I rise every morning worth . . . . thousand pounds?”—“No,” answered the man, archly, “I really did not exactly know before you told me; but, by God! that is *all* you are worth.” Yet I have seen this man (who was neither loved by his kindred nor respected by his neighbours) come into a large company, when nearly the whole would start from their seats to bow to King Log.

Such is the strange infatuated folly of mankind! ever ready to make obeisance to riches without merit, even where they know, to an absolute certainty, they have no chance of receiving the smallest benefit from the party. This description of men I



have ever regarded, and am confident ever shall regard, with an eye of superiority, when I discover them swelling with an assumed consequential pride, derived from riches only. Yet I respect rank and property as much as any man, where the possessor makes a beneficial use of them or himself.

For time immemorial, a dangerous nuisance had existed at a ford, which was impassable when the tide came up. To avoid this, it was necessary to ride some miles about or await the fall of the tide. As the attempt of strangers to pass it, (for it was a place of considerable thoroughfare,) when the depth of water was doubtful, or at night, was attended with great danger, it seemed rather extraordinary that no public-spirited man had endeavoured to remedy an evil so generally complained of. It was the more so, as two gentlemen of property, magistrates of the county, who had successively lived within sight of it for a number of years, could neither go out nor return home, nor

have friends to see them, without being subjected to danger or confined to time.

It affected me as little as any one in the country; but, being requested by some respectable individuals to take it in hand, I convened a meeting, suggested proposals, and procured an estimate for building a bridge and forming a long causeway. Finding the amount too great to be raised by private subscription, an application was recommended and made accordingly to the Court of Quarter-Sessions, for assistance from the county. The court consented to build the bridge, the committee engaging to make and keep up the causeway by private subscriptions; so that, in a few months, I had the satisfaction of seeing this dangerous nuisance abated, by a brick bridge and a commodious long causeway. While the man, (a magistrate,) who, living nearest, was to receive the greatest benefit, was so much mortified, and his pride so considerably hurt, to think a person of little or no property, compared to his own, had taken a lead in bringing it forward



and finally effecting it, that he punished himself, for several months, by driving through the mud and water, rather than travel over the bridge with his carriage. And such whimsical self-tormenting beings are some men, that he added to his own mortification by tendering a subscription of five guineas towards it, when he found the plan succeeding without his aid and against his threatened opposition at the sessions: his offer, however, was declined by the committee.

A country-life is not expected to produce much variety. It has likewise a general character for greater simplicity of manners and integrity of heart than in cities and large populous places; yet, in the course of several years, during which I was endeavouring to improve myself in agricultural knowledge, I occasionally met with incidents that tended to impress me with vexation, at discovering as much duplicity and deceit (considering the numbers) in the country as can be found in the metropolis. In plain truth, as far as my experience teaches me, virtue and vice are

not attached to one particular description of men more than another; they are neither stationary nor confined: simple swains, honest tars, &c. &c. are pleasant sounds enough, but in reality they are neither better nor worse than the rest of mankind. From various cases of profligacy and wickedness, that came before me as a country-magistrate, I select the following; as well deserving of record for audacity as any to be found in the Newgate-calendar.

A man, of the name of Thurston, was brought before me, charged by a farmer with having stolen two fat hogs from him. They had been traced to a publican's in my neighbourhood, where they were found just killed and hung up for cooling. By particular cuts and marks, they were well identified: the publican had bought them of Thurston, who, as a labouring man in husbandry, said he had reared them from pigs. He was to be conveyed twenty miles to the county-goal; the constable therefore hand-cuffed and locked him up, for the night, in a strong cage in the market-place. From this he broke out; first clearing him-



self of the hand-cuffs by means of a very fine saw, made from a steel watch-spring, which he held between his teeth to saw with. On his escape being discovered in the morning, a hue and cry was made in all directions, but there were no tidings of him the whole day.

As Thurston lived at a cottage, in a bye-place, at seven or eight miles distance, I had directed one party of the pursuers to enter the cottage at dusk; and, keeping all within quiet, watch for his coming home to his wife the following night. This was done, one man sitting within and two watching his approach without. Thurston, however, had passed the two on the outside unobserved; and, lifting the latch, opened the cottage-door and walked in, without speaking, heavily loaded with a naked dead body on his back, fastened over his shoulders by a cord, the bite of which he held with his hands in front. It was fortunate, perhaps, for the man waiting in the cottage, that Thurston was thus encumbered and unable to make resistance; and, in that state of encumbrance, the man

seized and made him sit down on a wooden form, or stool, to wait the coming of one or both of his colleagues. This was not long; and, on procuring a light, the dead body he was loaded with proved to be one of those hogs he had stolen, when alive, from the farmer, and again stolen from the premises of the publican as soon as he had liberated himself from the hand-cuffs and the cage. When this dead hog was reported to be taken from the publican, the suspicion fell on the publican himself, that he had secreted it to save its being claimed and taken from him by the farmer. Nor was the real culprit in the least suspected of this felony, until apprehended with it.

The prisoner now desired to make a free confession of other crimes he had committed, and among them a murder. Being first admonished to take care and well consider the consequence, he persevered and declared, that, in company with another man, whom he mentioned, they together murdered the house-keeper of a farmer at Danbury-common. This murder had been committed some months previous to



the time of the robbery, various examinations had been taken, but no discovery made of the perpetrator. Thurston gave a minute detail of the circumstances: a warrant was issued, and the party he accused was apprehended, brought before me, and charged by him as an accomplice. The circumstantial account he related was corroborated, in many parts, by his absence from the place where he should have been at work, at the time the murder was committed, by his being seen in that neighbourhood agreeably to his statement, and by the state the murdered woman was found in, with a description of the goods in the house, corresponding with such accounts as had before been deposed by the people who first saw the state of things when the murder was discovered.

The examinations occupied three days, as many witnesses were sent for who lived at the distance of from twelve to sixteen miles. At every examination, he declared before the man he accused as his accomplice, in the most solemn manner he could express himself, that they really committed

the murder. In answer to my exhorting him to beware of committing another murder, if, as the accused said, he was innocent, Thurston used this strong expression: "Sir, I know I am a lost man every way, and must soon answer for my many great sins before Almighty God; and, sir, if you were God Almighty himself, and I was to answer face to face, as I now do before you, I would say the same, that this man and I committed the murder." They were committed accordingly for trial: in the mean time, however, he recanted all he had thus advanced and confessed about the murder. They were tried and both acquitted; Thurston was then tried for the felony, convicted, and transported.

This was a country-swain! I know of others equally atrocious, and am fully convinced that as much wickedness exists in the country as in crowded cities.

As it relates to my own difficulties, I must also mention one sorry specimen of ingratitude, as well as to shew the small dependence to be placed in friendships



with those whose minds and actions are principally governed by avarice and motives of self-interest. I set it down as an axiom, that an open-hearted liberal-spirited man may lie down among rattle-snakes with as much safety as attempt to cultivate friendships or form connections with men of covetous or dastardly dispositions.

END OF THE FIRST VOL.

and the other side of the mountain the  
road leads to the village of St. John's  
and the other side of the mountain the  
road leads to the village of St. John's  
and the other side of the mountain the  
road leads to the village of St. John's  
and the other side of the mountain the  
road leads to the village of St. John's  
and the other side of the mountain the  
road leads to the village of St. John's

and the other side of the mountain the

and the other side of the mountain the



